# Academia Arena

Academia Arena

Marsland Press PO Box 180432 Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Websites:

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia

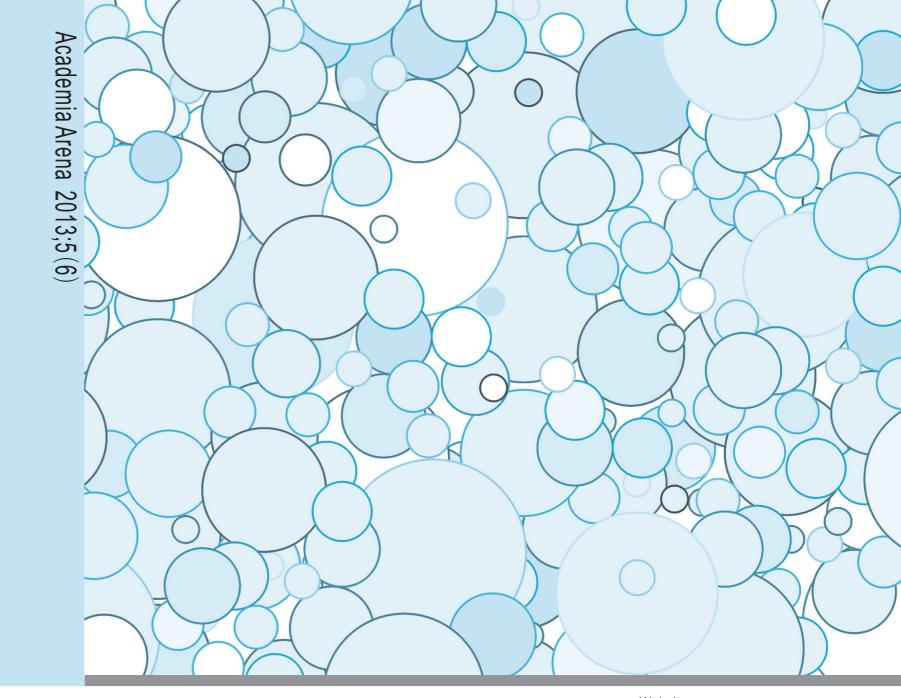
http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails:

aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net

Phone: (347) 321-7172

Cover design: MA, Hongbao Photograph: YOUNG, Mary





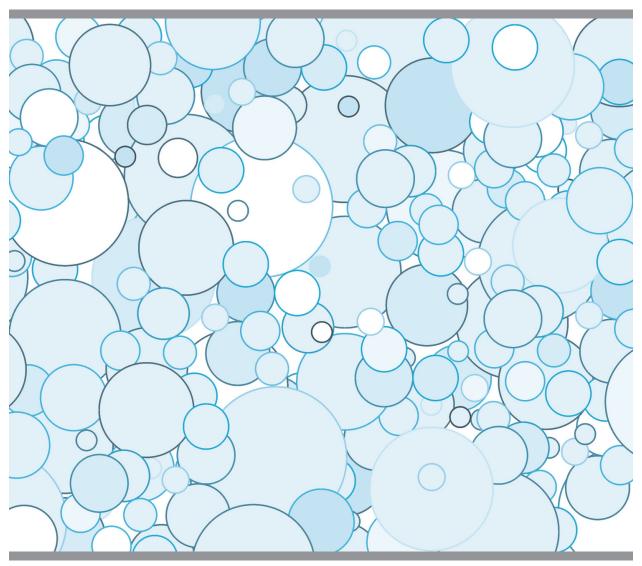


Websites:

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails: aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net Volume 5, Number 6 June 25, 2013 ISSN:1553-992X

# Academia Arena





Websites: http://www.sciencepub.net/academia http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails: aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net

# Academia Arena

(Academ Arena) ISSN 1553-992X

# 学术争鸣

Academia Arena is published bi-linguistically with English and Chinese for the scientists and Engineers. The journal founded in January 1, 2009 aims to present an arena of science and engineering. The Editor-in-Chief, Associate Editors-in-Chief and Editors have backgrounds in Philosophy, Science, Technology, Cosmology, Mathematics, Physics, Chemistry, Biology, Medicine, Civil, Electrical, Mechanical Engineering, etc. Papers submitted could be reviews, objective descriptions, research reports, opinions/debates, news, letters, and other types of writings.

学术争鸣于2009年元月1日在美国纽约马斯兰德出版社发刊,主要目标为提供科学家与工程师及社会工作者学术辩论的发表园地,专业 领域包含哲学、科学、技术、宇宙学、数学、物理、化学、生物学、医学、土木、电机、化工、机械工程,等,编辑群将以最专业客 观的立场为所有投稿作者服务。

Editor-in-Chief: Ma, Hongbao, mahongbao@gmail.com

Associate Editors-in-Chief: Cherng, Shen; Henry, Mark; Herbert, John

Editors: Badoni, Anoop; Chen, George; Chen, Guoren; Kalimuthu, Sennimalai; Kholoussi, Naglaa; Kumar, Anand; Ma, Margaret; Mahmoud, Amal; Tan, Tianrong; Tewari, Lalit M; Wang, Kuide; Young, Jenny; Refaat, Youssef; Yusuf, Mahmoud; Zaki, Maha Saad; Zaki, Mona Saad Ali; Zhang, Dongsheng

Web Design: Ma, Hongbao

#### Information for Authors

#### 1. Manuscripts Submission

- (1) Submission Methods: Electronic submission through email would be accepted.
- (2) Software: The Microsoft Word file is preferred.
- (3) Font: Normal, Times New Roman, 10 pt, single space.
- (4) Indent: Type 4 spaces in the beginning of each new paragraph.
- (5) Manuscript: Don't use "Footnote" or "Header and Footer".
- (6) Cover Page: Put detail information of authors and a short running title in the cover page.
- (7) Title: Use Title Case in the title and subtitles, e.g. "Debt and Agency Costs".
- (8) Figures and Tables: Use full word of figure and table, e.g. "Figure 1. Annul Income of Different Groups", Table 1. List Data".
- (9) References: Cite references by "last name, year", e.g. "(Smith, 2003)". References should include all the authors' last names and initials, title, journal, year, volume, issue, and pages etc.

#### Reference Examples:

Journal Article: Hacker J, Hentschel U, Dobrindt U. Prokaryotic chromosomes and disease. Science 2003;301(34):790-3.

**Book**: Berkowitz BA, Katzung BG. Basic and clinical evaluation of new drugs. In: Katzung BG, ed. Basic and clinical pharmacology. Appleton & Lance Publisher. Norwalk, Connecticut, USA. 1995:60-9.

#### (10) Submission Address: Marsland Press

PO Box 180432, Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA; Telephone: (347) 321-7172; Email: <a href="mailto:editor@sciencepub.net">editor@sciencepub.net</a>.

(11) Reviewers: Authors should suggest 2-8 competent reviewers with their name and email.

#### 2. Manuscript Preparation

Each manuscript should be formatted to include the following components:

- (1) Title: Complete article title;
- (2) Author(s): Each author's full name; institution(s) with which each author is affiliated, with city, state/province, zip code, and country; and the name, complete mailing address, telephone number, facsimile number (if available), and e-mail address for all correspondence.
- (3) Abstract: including Background, Materials and Methods, Results, and Discussions.
- (4) Key Words.
- (5) Introduction.
- (6) Materials and Methods.
- (7) Results.
- (8) Discussions.
- (9) Acknowledgments.
- (10) References.
- (11) Date submitted
- **3.** Copyright and Responsibility of Authors to their Articles: When the manuscript(s) is submitted to the journal, the authors agree the following: All the authors have participated sufficiently in this work; The article is not published elsewhere; Authors are responsibility on the contents of the article; The journal and author(s) have same right for the copyright of the article and either of the journal or author(s) can use it by anyway without noting the other party.

#### Journal Address:

Marsland Press PO Box 180432

Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Telephone: (347) 321-7172 E-mail: <u>sciencepub@gmail.com</u>; <u>editor@sciencepub.net</u>

Websites: http://www.sciencepub.net

© 2013 Marsland Press

# **CONTENTS**

1	黑洞宇宙学 ====作者对黑洞理论的新发展达成了黑洞理论、宇宙学、基本信息理论之间结 合==== 张洞生	1-20
2	<b>对物理学和社会科学中一些基本观念的反思</b> 谭天荣	21-29
3	Optimization of energy required and energy analysis for rice production using data envelopment Analysis approach Adel ranji (Corresponding author), Hamed rajabzadeh, Hamidreza Khakrah, Payam hooshmand, Hamid Atari	30-40
4	Studies On The Microbial Flora Found In The Intestine Of <i>Heteroclarias</i> Specie Okadinya. M.O, Ugoh, S.C And Solomon, J.R.	41-51
5	Gas Chromatography-Mass Spectrometry Analysis Of Petroleum Ether Extract Of Piper Guineese Seeds (Schum And Thonn) Usenekong O.E., Sambo David And Efiom, O	52-55

#### The Black-hole Cosmology—黑洞宇宙学

====The black-hole theory and cosmology can be better integrated as the black-hole cosmology====

张洞生 Zhang Dongsheng Email: zds@outlook.com, zhangds12@hotmail.com

[Abstract] . There are two parts in this article: <Part One: The new developments \ new formulas and new conclusios of the black-hole theory>. <Part Two: The brand-new black-hole cosmology may be created with applying the complete integration between new black-hole theory and cosmology>. On the foundation of the new developments of black-hole theory in Part One, many new important formulas can be derived out, such as the most important general formula (1d)-- $m_{ss}M_b = hC/8\pi G = 1.187 \times 10^{-10} g^{2[1]}$  and others. They may better systematically explain and demonstrate the evolutionary laws of our cosmos. Thus, it might be called as a brand-new branch of cosmology, i.e. 'The black-hole cosmology'. For an example, it would be very easily demonstrated that our Universe could be a real gigantic black-hole with black-hole formulas.

[Zhang Dongsheng. The Black-hole Cosmology - The complete integration between black-hole theory and black-hole cosmology. *Academia Arena* 2013;5(6):1-20] (ISSN 1553-992X). <a href="http://www.sciencepub.net/academia">http://www.sciencepub.net/academia</a>.

【Key Words】。Black hole; black-hole theory; cosmology; Hawking quantum radiation; the minimum BH; Planck particle; the information amount of Hawking quantum radiation; the information amount of black holes; the entropy of black holes; the basic information unit

#### 黑洞宇宙学

====作者对黑洞理论的新发展达成了黑洞理论、宇宙学、基本信息理论之间结合====

张洞生 Zhang Dong Sheng Email: zds@outlook.com; zhangds12@hotmail.com;

笛卡儿:我们不能依赖他人的权威而接受真理,必须自己寻求。 老子: '大道至简'。简单的方法也可能解决最困难最复杂的问题。

【内容摘要】: 本文对黑洞理论的新发展和新公式完全是根据霍金的黑洞理论发展而来的。发展后的黑洞理论的新观点和新公式可完好地解释和验证我们宇宙的演变规律,而成为名符其实的'黑洞宇宙学'。本文分为 2 篇。第一篇是《黑洞理论的新发展、新公式和新结论》。最重要的成果是推导出来霍金辐射量子  $m_{ss}$ 与黑洞质量  $M_b$  之间的新公式(1d),还有最小黑洞  $M_{bm}(1e)$ 、单位信息量  $I_o$  熵  $S_B$  等一系列新公式,并用经典理论解释了黑洞发射霍金辐射的机理。从而使黑洞理论趋向完善。第二篇《黑洞理论和宇宙学完善的结合成为'黑洞宇宙学'》是作者用第一篇的黑洞理论的公式解决宇宙起源和演化中的一些重大问题。如证明我们宇宙诞生于在普郎克领域 Planck Era 新生成的大量原初最小黑洞  $M_{bl}=2M_{bm}\equiv2m_{p}$ ,即普朗克粒子  $m_{p}$ 的合并,而不是诞生于"奇点"或"奇点的大爆炸";证明我们现在宇宙是一个质量为  $10^{56}$  g 的真正的巨无霸宇宙黑洞(CBH);宇宙'原初暴涨'(Original Inflation)的新机理和新证明等。从宇宙 7 种不同大小的黑洞  $M_b$ 来分析宇宙黑洞的演变。证实了作者黑洞新理论和公式与宇宙大爆炸标准模型图表是一致的。【张洞生、黑洞宇宙学 - 作者对黑洞理论的新发展达成了黑洞理论、宇宙学、基本信息理论之间结合.

[张洞生. 黑洞宇宙学 - 作者对黑洞理论的新发展达成了黑洞理论、宇宙学、基本信息理论之间结合. *Academia Arena* 2013;5(6):1-20] (ISSN 1553-992X). http://www.sciencepub.net/academia. 1

【关键词】。黑洞理论;宇宙学;普朗克粒子;霍金辐射;最小黑洞;普朗克领域;宇宙黑洞;宇宙原初暴涨;霍金辐射的信息量;单元信息量 $I_0$ ;黑洞的信息量;黑洞的熵

【前言】。用广义相对论方程(EGTR)去解决黑洞和宇宙学问题是不可能的,因为其一般解无法解出。<u>用爱因斯坦的话说,该方程完美到无法加进去任何东西</u>。因此,其后的学者们就只能退而求其次,力图找出该方程的特殊解,为此就要提出许多简化假设作为解方程的边界条件和前提,其中有 2 个通用而主要的假设条件就是:一团质-能粒子的等质能量运动和零压(等压)宇宙模型,其目的是将一团宇宙中物质粒子的运动简(理想化)化为可用流体力学的方程来处理。然而,正是这 2 个假设条件违反了宇宙中之最重要而普遍的规律---热力学定律,从而导致解场方程时出现'奇点'、史瓦西度规和弗里德曼(Freidmann)方程 R-

W 度规(Robertson-Walker 度规)等不切实际的错误结论。而且,按照史瓦西对场方程的特殊解,宇宙中一旦一个黑洞形成之后,他只能因吞噬外界质-能后膨胀,然后永远地存在于宇宙之中,这不符合宇宙中任何事物都有生长衰亡的普遍规律。因此,用解 EGTR(场方程)以解决黑洞和宇宙学问题是一条走不通的道路和方法。这就是近 100 年来,除了由解场方程得出少数几个近似解外,而无普遍建树的原因。[5][2]

**霍金的黑洞理论是划时代的伟大而符合实际的理论,它是建立在热力学和量子力学的坚实的实验基础上的。**霍金提出了在黑洞<u>视</u>界半径  $R_b$  上有温度  $T_b$ ,能发射热辐射,即量子辐射  $m_{ss}$ 。因此,黑洞会损失其质-能而收缩,并最后消失。就是说,黑洞与宇宙中的任何事物一样,都符合生长衰亡的普遍规律。

但是,<u>以前的霍金黑洞理论公式只有在其视界半径  $R_b$ </u>上的 2 个公式,即黑洞总质-能量  $M_b$ 与  $R_b$ 的史瓦西公式(1c),  $GM_b/R_b = C^2/2$ ,和黑洞在其视界半径  $R_b$ 上的霍金温度公式(1a).  $T_b$   $M_b = (C^3/4G) \times (h/2\pi\kappa)$ 。

但仅有这 2 个公式远不能解决黑洞理论中其余的重大问题,特别是因为不知道霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  的性质和量,就不能知道黑洞的许多重要性能,及其生长衰亡的规律。

遗憾的是,也许<u>由于霍金的'智者千虑必有一失',或忙于从狄拉克海的真空能去寻找霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ 。所以他最终没有求出霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ 与黑洞质量  $M_b$ 之间的关系。而导致作者'愚者千虑必有一得',只跨出了一小步,就得出来  $m_{ss}$ 和另外几个重要的新公式。下面是作者对黑洞理论和宇宙学新发展的重点贡献。</u>

- 1; 作者简单地推导出来霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  与黑洞总能量-质量  $M_b$  的准确的新公式(1d),即  $\underline{m_{ss}}$   $M_b$  =  $\underline{hC/8\pi G} = 1.187 \times 10^{-10} g^2$ ,从而打开了进入黑洞理论的神秘大门。[1]

- 4;证实公式<u>(1d)  $m_{ss}$   $M_b = hC/8\pi G = 1.187 \times 10^{-10} g^2$  的物理意义是黑洞  $M_b$  对  $m_{ss}$  在  $R_b$  上的引力与其离 <u>心力的平衡</u>,并论证了黑洞发射  $m_{ss}$  的机理与恒星发射电磁波的机理是相同的,都是热辐射由高能向低能、由高温向低温的自然流动。霍金用狄拉克海的虚粒子对来解释是在故弄玄虚,不符合宇宙的实际情况。</u>
- **5;** 证明了任何一个黑洞的霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  的信息量  $I_o$  =  $h/2\pi$  =基本单元信息量 = 最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$  和普朗克粒子  $m_p$  的信息量(63a), 而与黑洞的总质 能量  $M_b$  和  $m_{ss}$  的大小无关。推导出来黑洞的总信息量的新公式  $I_m$  =  $4GM_b^2/C$  (63d)。

本文第二篇是在用第一篇的黑洞新推导出来的公式解决宇宙学的许多重大问题。

- **7;**按照时间对称原理,假设在我们宇宙诞生前,一前辈大宇宙有一次大塌缩,其最后的塌缩规律近似于我们宇宙诞生时的膨胀规律,因此推导出公式(3c),即  $t \le [k_l (2G\kappa)/C^5]^{2/3}$ ,并由此计算出当前辈宇宙大塌缩到  $\underline{t_m} = 0.5563 \times 10^{-43} s$  时,形成了粒子之间和粒子内部的引力断链,立即成为  $M_{bm} = m_p$  在普朗克领域、而不是'奇点'的爆炸解体消亡。其残骸物必定会重新聚集结合成为新的最小黑洞  $M_{bl} = 2M_{bm} = 2m_p = 2 \times 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g \approx 2.2 \times 10^{-5} g$ . $M_{bm}$ ,它们的出现就是我们新宇宙的诞生。<u>新的极大量的</u>  $M_{bl} = 2M_{bm} = 2m_p$ 的合并造成了宇宙的'原初暴涨'和直到现在的宇宙膨胀。
- **8**; 作者用新的简单的原理论证了我们宇宙的'原初暴涨(Original Inflation)',并证明了宇宙现在的膨胀就是极大量的原初最小黑洞  $M_{bm} = m_p$ 不断地合并的结果。
- 9; 完全证明了我们现在膨胀的宇宙就是一个真实的宇宙巨无霸黑洞。哈勃定律就是极大量的原初最小黑洞  $M_{bl} = 2\underline{M}_{bm} = 2\underline{m}_{p}$  合并和吞噬外界能量-物质所造成的膨胀规律。由于黑洞  $M_{b}$ 确定了唯一密度 $\rho_{b}$ ,只能是  $\Omega \equiv 1$ 。因此科学家们数十年来,用弗里德曼模型所定义的  $\Omega$ 去判断宇宙是开放还是封闭,实际上是一个伪命题。
  - 10;验证了宇宙黑洞的膨胀表二与宇宙大爆炸标准模型的膨胀图一的一致性。

【作者几句简要的话】。作者深信:对科学的真知灼见常常来源于繁碎的数值计算,也必须经得起数值计算的检验。作者在文中主要是根据霍金的一些黑洞理论和公式,再加上几个经典理论的公式,来推导和计算出一些新公式,如(1d),(1e),(63a),(63d)和表 2 等,相信它们能经得起未来时间和实践的考验,也相信简单明确地解决了黑洞和宇宙学中的一些重大的理论和实际问题,比如'奇点'、霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub>、黑洞的命运、宇宙起源、黑洞信息量等。因文中没有复杂的数学公式和玄奥的理论,在主流学者们的眼里,或会不屑一

顾,作者也未指望会得到毕生研究广义相对论学者们的承认和支持。<u>作者的新观念、新公式、新结论,一切都是简单明了的。</u>人们很容易判断其对错优劣,作出结论。**科学的本质是简单朴实的,无高级低级之分,牛顿的运动 3 定律难道不够简单吗?** 作者认为,只要文中的公式是新的、能较完满的解释解决黑洞宇宙学中的问题、并符合实际情况和观测数据的、而又与经典科学理论和公式吻合,就是真实的科学。作者诚恳希望各位对文章的错误和缺点进行批判和指正。

### 第一篇 黑洞理论的新发展、新公式和新结论

#### 在本文中,只研究无旋转、无电荷、球对称的引力黑洞,即史瓦西黑洞。

### 【序言】。黑洞理论的起源、发展和完善

**§ 1; 拉普拉斯 Laplace(1749 - 1827)首先提出了黑洞概念**。1796 年,拉普拉斯在<宇宙体系论>里有一段话,'天空中存在着黑暗的天体,像恒星那样大,也许也像恒星那样多。一个具有与地球同样的密度而直径为太阳 250 倍的明亮星球,它发射的光将被自身的引力拉住而不能被我们接收。' <sup>[2]</sup> 按照牛顿力学,假设人造卫星绕地球表面的飞行的第一宇宙速度 v<sub>1</sub>,

$$v_1 = (GM_e/R_e)^{1/2} = 7.9 \text{km/s}^{[4]}$$
 (a)

上式中 $M_e$ 是地球质量, $R_e$ 是地球半径。而人造卫星的第二宇宙速度即为逃逸速度 $v_2$ ,根据机械能守恒原理,可得,

$$v_2 = (2GM_e/R_e)^{1/2} = 2^{1/2}v_1 = 11.2 \text{km/s}^{[4]}$$
 (b)

上面的公式即可用于**拉普拉斯的**黑洞观念。由于1676年丹麦天文学家罗默(O. C. Romer)已经测出光速。将拉普拉斯假设的天体半径和地球密度  $5.5 \text{g/cm}^3$ 代入(b)式,计算其表面的逃逸速度 $\mathbf{v}_2 = 3.1 \times 10^{10} \text{cm/s} \approx \text{光速C} = 3 \times 10^{10} \text{cm/s}$ 。 [2] 当然,当时拉普拉斯是根据牛顿的光粒子学说将光看成粒子而计算出来的。

这只是拉普拉斯想象的、虚构的、不可能在自然界存在的黑洞,因如此庞然大物而有5.5g/cm³的地球密度,在其形成黑洞前,必然早已塌缩成无数单独的恒星级( $3M_{\theta}$ —太阳质量  $2\times10^{33}$ g)小黑洞了。

# §2; 史瓦西(爱因斯坦,引力)黑洞,建立了黑洞 M<sub>h</sub>和视界半径R<sub>b</sub>的史瓦西公式。

1915年12月,爱因斯坦广义相对论刚发表一个月后,德国天文学家卡尔•史瓦西(Karl Schswarzschild)即得到了一个用广义相对论弯曲空间概念描述的球状物体周围引力场的精确解。史瓦西指出,如果致密天体的全部质量压缩到某一半径限,范围内,它周围的空间就因引力而足够弯曲到任何物质和辐射都逃不出来,这一天体就成为黑洞。[2]

$$GM_b/R_b = C^2/2^{[2]}$$
 (1c)

(1c)式就是黑洞存在的必要条件。根据这个解的物理意义可知,粒子或辐射只能在R,上作圆周运

动,而受 $M_b$ 的引力作用,不能离开 $R_b$ 而逃到黑洞外界,如用广义相对论的观点表示,粒子或辐射只能在以 $R_b$ 为圆周上依侧地线运动。将(1c)式与(a) (b) 式作比较,它们之间的差别在于:牛顿力学是将物体的总质量都集中到中心作为中心点引力,而在相对论中,物体的总质量是作为均匀分散在整个半径的球体内的质点来处理的。所以同样的质量,相对论的引力大于牛顿力学。

由广义相对论得出的黑洞是一个在宇宙中只会长大而永不消失怪物。一旦黑洞生成,它只会吸收外界能量-物质而膨胀增大,在宇宙中永不消失。所以它违反宇宙中任何事物都有生长衰亡的普遍规律。

§ 3;霍金黑洞。霍金建立了黑洞 $M_b$ 与视界半径 $R_b$ 上的温度 $T_b$ 的公式。霍金对黑洞理论的伟大贡献,就是将量子力学和热力学运用于黑洞,得出了黑洞在其视界半径 $R_b$ 上存在温度 $T_b$ ,其温度公式为:

 $T_b M_b = (C^3/4G) \times (h/2\pi\kappa) \approx 10^{27} g k^{|1|}$  (1a) 霍金证明了黑洞跟黑体一样,发射霍金量子辐射,因而得出了黑洞熵、寿命等一系列重要公式。唯一的遗憾是没有推断出霍金量子辐射 $m_{ss}$ 的公式。

霍金的黑洞理论证明,黑洞会因发射霍金量子辐射而缩小消亡,使黑洞与宇宙中的任何物体和事物一样,具有生长衰亡的普遍规律。**所以正是霍金的黑洞理论挽救了广义相对论的黑洞理论**。

但是,霍金没有推导出霍金量子辐射m<sub>ss</sub>的量和 公式,这使黑洞理论仍存在重大的缺陷。

§4. 作者完善了黑洞理论。根据粒子的引力能转化为辐射能的公式 $m_{ss}C^2 = \kappa T_b$  代入公式(1a) 式,作者建立了黑洞 $M_b$ 和霍金辐射 $m_{ss}$ 的公式(1d),才首创地使黑洞理论成为一整套完整的理论。

【1】。<u>黑洞的霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ , $m_{ss}M_b = hC/8\pi G =$ </u> 1.187×10<sup>-10</sup>g<sup>2</sup>,和最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub> ≡ 普朗克粒子 m<sub>n</sub> =  $(hC/8\pi G)^{1/2}$  =1.09×10<sup>-5</sup>g 公式的推导和证明。 1-1\*。下面 (1a)是著名的霍金黑洞的温度公式,

 $T_b M_b = (C^3/4G) \times (h/2\pi\kappa) \approx 10^{27} \text{gk}^{[1]}$  (1a)

 $M_b$ —黑洞的总质-能量;  $R_b$ —黑洞的视界半径,  $T_{b}$ --黑洞的视界半径  $R_{b}$  上的温度, $m_{ss}$ —黑洞在视界 半径  $R_b$ 上的霍金辐射的相当质量,h—普朗克常数 =  $6.63 \times 10^{-27}$ g\*cm<sup>2</sup>/s, C -- 光速 =  $3 \times 10^{10}$  cm/s, G -- 万 有引力常数=  $6.67 \times 10^{-8} \text{cm}^3/\text{s}^2 \cdot \text{g}$ , 波尔兹曼常数  $\kappa$  = 1.38×10<sup>--16</sup>g<sub>\*</sub>cm<sup>2</sup>/s<sup>2</sup>\*k, L<sub>p</sub>—普朗克长度; T<sub>p</sub>—普朗克 温度; 最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub> 的视界半径 R<sub>bm</sub> 和视界半径上 的温度 T<sub>bm</sub>;

mss 既然是霍金量子辐射,是在视界半径 Rb上 的 mss, 按引力能转换为辐射能的阀温公式,

$$m_{ss} = \kappa T_b / C^2$$
 (1b)

再根据史瓦西对广义相对论方程的特殊解,

 $GM_b/R_b = C^2/2^{[1][2]}$ (1c)

从(1a)和(1b),很容易得出另一个黑洞新公式,  $m_{ss} M_b = hC/8\pi G = 1.187 \times 10^{-10} g^2$ (1d)

公式 (1d) 是黑洞的视界半径 R, 上普遍有效的公 式。既然 m<sub>ss</sub>M<sub>b</sub> 为常数,根据热力学第三定律, 必 定有  $T_b \neq 0$ ,因此,就可得出  $\underline{m}_{ss} \neq 0$ , $M_b \neq 0$ ,因而  $\mathbf{m}_{ss}$  和  $\mathbf{M}_{b}$  及其黑洞密度 $\rho_{b}$  都不可能是无限大和零, 就是说, ms 和 Mb 都必定有个极限。同样, 按照 (1a) 、(1b)。 (1c)<u>式</u>, T<sub>b</sub>、R<sub>b</sub>也都不可能是无限大和 零,都必定有个极限。再根据部分不可能大于全体 的公理。这个极限就是最大的 mss 必定等于最小的  $M_{bm}$ , 即是  $M_{b}$ =  $M_{bm}$  =  $m_{ss}$  =  $(hC/8\pi G.)^{1/2}$ 。 再从量子引力论得知 $(hC/8\pi G)^{1/2}$ =  $m_{p}$  = 普朗克粒子,<sup>[3]</sup>于是, 黑洞 Mb 最后只能收缩成为最小黑洞 Mbm。

$$\underline{\mathbf{m}_{ss}} = \underline{\mathbf{M}_{bm}} = \underline{\mathbf{hC}/8\pi G}^{-1/2} = \underline{\mathbf{m}_{p}} = 1.09 \times 10^{-5}$$
 (1e)  
 $\underline{\mathbf{m}_{ss}} \underline{\mathbf{R}_{b}} = \underline{\mathbf{h}/(4\pi C)}$  (1f)

$$R_{\text{bm}} = L_{\text{p}}^{[3]} = (Gh/2\pi C^3)^{1/2} = 1.61 \times 10^{-33} \text{cm} \text{ (1g)}$$

$$\overline{R_{bm}} = L_p^{[3]} = (Gh/2\pi C^3)^{1/2} = 1.61 \times 10^{-33} \text{cm} \quad (1g) 
T_{bm} = T_p^{[3]} = 0.71 \times 10^{32} \text{k} \quad (1h)$$

$$R_{bm}m_{ss} = h/(4\pi C) = 1.0557 \times 10^{-37} cmg$$
 (1i)

最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub>的康普顿时间 Compton time t<sub>c</sub>=史 瓦西时间 t<sub>bm</sub>, 于是,

$$\mathbf{t_c} = \mathbf{t_{bm}} = R_{bm}/C = 1.61 \times 10^{-33}/3 \times 10^{10} = \mathbf{0.537} \times \mathbf{10}^{-43} \mathbf{s},$$
(1j)

$$\rho_{bm} = 0.6 \times 10^{93} \text{g/cm}^3$$
 (1k)

从  $M_b = 4\pi \rho R_b^3/3$  和 (1c)、对于任何一个黑洞、下 面的(1m) 式总是有效的。

$$\rho_b R_b^2 = 3C^2/(8\pi G) = constant$$
 (1m)

1-2\*; 由于 M<sub>bm</sub> 与 m<sub>ss</sub> <u>是最后被分裂出来的 2 个最</u> 大的能量粒子, 即等于普朗克粒子 mp, 但它们并不 是真实的黑洞, 因为它们不再能够发射单独的霍金 辐射 mss 了。因此,在宇宙中能够独立存在过的真正 最小黑洞  $M_{bl}$ 是分裂成  $M_{bm} = m_{ss}$ 的前身,即,

$$M_{bl} = 2M_{bm} = 2m_{ss} = 2.2 \times 10^{-5}g$$
 (1n)

1-3\*; 黑洞是宇宙中最简单的物体实体。从以上可 见, 4个黑洞的物理量, 即 $M_b$ ,  $R_b$ ,  $T_b$ ,  $m_{ss}$ 可以完 全由3个独立队公式(1c), (1a), (1d)得出。具有如下 特点: (1); 都是简单的单值关系, (2); 在4个 物理量中,只要1个确定了,其它3个也跟着单值地 被确定了, (3); 各个物理量都与4个自然常数 h, C, G, κ 相对应, 与它们有某种确定的关系。 (4);4个物理量只影响黑洞在视界半径上的状 态,而与黑洞内部的状态和结构没有关系。所以, 同等Mb黑洞的状态、性质和4个物理量是完全相同 **的,与其内部的状态结构无任何关系。**(5);决定 黑洞4个物理量的3个公式(1c), (1a), (1d)中,  $m_{ss}$ 公 式(1d)是作者新推导出来的,由于有了这个4公式, 黑洞理论才趋向完善。

结论: (A); 黑洞既然是经典理论, 即牛顿力 学,相对论、热力学和量子力学综合的产物。黑洞 理论中的问题就只能综合上述经典理论来解决。 (B); 黑洞在其视界半径的4个参数 $M_b$ ,  $R_b$ , T<sub>b</sub>, m<sub>ss</sub>决定了其R<sub>b</sub>的膨胀和收缩,上面的4个参数

最后只能收缩成为最小黑洞 $M_{bm} = m_{ss} = m_{p}$ ,而与黑 洞内部M。的结构、分布和运动状态无关,如此,广 义相对论—ETGR方程在本文中就毫无用处。(C); 本 文中的所有结论就与ETGR的结论完全不同。因为 以往的科学家们为了能解出复杂的ETGR,提出了 许多违反热力学定律的简化的假设,如忽略了物质 粒子的热抗力、忽略温度密度的改变而造成热抗力 的增减,提出宇宙学原理等等,结果导致出现'奇点' 的谬论。

【2】。如何理解当黑洞因发射霍金辐射 mss 而最后 收缩为最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub> = m<sub>ss</sub>=普朗克粒子 m<sub>n</sub>时,会必 然在普朗克领域爆炸解体消亡,而不会继续收缩成 为'奇点'呢?

按照公式(1d),  $m_{ss}M_b = hC/8\pi G = 1.187 \times 10^{-5}$  $^{10}g^2$ , 当黑洞  $M_b$  无外界能量-物质可被吞噬、而不停 地发射 mss 时, Mb 只能相应地不停地减少, 直到最 后成为最小黑洞  $M_{bl}$ , 而后分解为, $M_{bl} = 2M_{bm} = 2m_{ss}$  $=2m_{\mathfrak{p}}$ °

为什么最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub> 刚好完全等于普朗克粒子 m,? 这个问题很难回答,因为人们对普朗克领域也 许永远无法观察和测量。正因为如此,所以科学家 们才提出许多无法直接验证而玄奥的理论,如弦 论、膜论、多维理论等。但是,有一点也许可以确 定,此时物质粒子已经不复存在,而完全彻底地量 子化为能量了。所以, $M_{bl} = 2M_{bm} = 2m_{ss}$  是我们字 宙中可能出现的最小黑洞,而普朗克粒子 mg 就是普 朗克领域可能出现的最大能量粒子, 它属于另一个世 界,或可称之为纯能量世界。因此,M<sub>hi</sub>就可能是我 们宇宙(即黑洞宇宙或物质宇宙)和普朗克领域这 2 个物理世界之间的'临界点',就像水在  $100^{\circ}$  C 时由液体变成气体一样,好像  $M_{bl}$  是液体,在  $T_{bm} \equiv T_p^{[3]} \equiv 0.71 \times 10^{32} k$  (1h) 时,变成为气体似的普朗克能量粒子  $m_p$ 。

2-1\*. 一旦黑洞 M<sub>b</sub> 收缩到 M<sub>bm</sub> = m<sub>p</sub>, 于是达到,

$$M_{bm} C^2 = m_{ss} C^2 = \kappa T_b = 10^{16} erg$$
 (2a)

$$M_{bm} C^2 / \kappa T_b = m_{ss} C^2 / \kappa T_b = 1$$
 (2b)

可见, $\underline{M_{bm}}$  已经整体成为一个完全孤立的能量 粒子,</u>根本没有多一点引力能量再转变为霍金辐射能  $m_{ss}$ ,因此,只有将整体  $\underline{M_{bm}} = m_{ss}$ 爆炸成高能的粉末,即高能 $\gamma$ —射线。

**2-2\*。如果**作为最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$  再继续收缩,就必然要使得  $m_{ss} > M_{bm}$ ,这不可能。如果再发射  $m_{ss} < M_{bm}$ ,也不可能。这违反黑洞公式(1d)和(1e),所以二者只能在普朗克领域爆炸解体消失。

**2-3\*。**由于普朗克粒子  $m_p = M_{bm}$  的史瓦西时间  $t_s = 0.537 \times 10^{-43} = R_{bm}/C = 1.61 \times 10^{-33}/3 \times 10^{10}$ ,因此,它已没有时间将其内部的引力质量捆绑在一起。且其瓦西时间  $t_s =$  其寿命  $10^{-42}$  s(见【5】节),最后, $M_{bm}$ 的温度已经高达  $10^{32}$  k,所以  $M_{bm}$  只能解体消失。

# 2-4\*。按照量子力学的测不准原理-- Uncertainty Principle,

$$\Delta E \times \Delta t \approx h/2\pi^{[3]}$$
 (2c)

对于  $M_{bm}$ , 其  $\Delta E = M_{bm}C^2 = \kappa T_b = 10^{16} erg$ , 其 $\Delta t = 2$  史瓦西时间  $t_{bm} = 2R_{bm}/C = 2\times1.61\times10^{-33}/3\times10^{10} = 1.074\times10^{-43}s$ 。

 $\therefore \Delta E \times \Delta t = 10^{16} \times (2 \times 0.537 \times 10^{-43}) = 1.074$   $\times 10^{-27}$ , 但是  $h/2\pi = 6.63 \times 10^{-27}/2\pi = \underline{1.06 \times 10^{-27}}$ 。就是说,**如果 M\_{bm} = m\_p** 再继续收缩下去的话,就必然使得  $\Delta E \times \Delta t < h/2\pi$ ,,**这违反了** Uncertainty Principle. 因此, $M_{bm}$  不可能存在,只能解体消失在普朗克领域,根本不可能继续塌缩成为'奇点'。

2-5\*。  $M_{bm} = m_p$  的信息量= $I_o = h/2\pi$  =宇宙中最小的信息量=单元信息量。无法再小了。(见下面【6】)

【3】。<u>黑洞最重要的本质属性</u>,一旦一个黑洞形成之后,不管它是因吞噬外界质能量而膨胀(见公式(3a)),还是因发射霍金辐射而缩小(见公式(3a)),在其最后成为<u>最小黑洞</u> M<sub>bm</sub> = <u>普朗克粒子</u> m<sub>p</sub>,而爆炸消失在普朗克领域之前,<u>他会永远是一个黑洞</u>。

按照史瓦西对广义相对论方程的特殊解(1c),

$$R_b = 2GM_b/C^2, (1c)$$

微分后得, $C^2 dR_b = 2GdM_b$ 

$$\therefore C^2(R_b \pm dR_b) = 2G(M_b \pm dM_b)$$
 (3a)

假设有另一个黑洞  $M_{ba}$ 与黑洞  $M_{b}$ 合并或碰撞, $C^{2}R_{ba} = 2GM_{ba}$  (3b)

从(3a)+(3b)+(1c), 结果,

 $C^{2}(R_{b}+R_{ba}\pm dR_{b}) = 2G(M_{b}+M_{ba}\pm dM_{b})$  (3c)

从公式(1a) (1b) (1c) (1d) 可知, 黑洞在吞噬外界能量-物质时,  $M_b$  和  $R_b$  增加,  $T_b$  和  $m_{ss}$ 减小; 在发射  $m_{ss}$  后,  $M_b$  减少,  $R_b$  缩小,  $T_b$  升高,  $m_{ss}$  增大,直到最后成为  $M_{bm}$ =  $m_{ss}$ = $m_p$ 解体消失。

从(1a)、(1b)、 (1c)、 (1d)式 看,黑洞  $M_b$  与其它性能参数  $T_b$ 、 $R_b$ 、 $m_{ss}$ 之间的关系都是简单单值的线性关系。因此,<u>黑洞是宇宙中最简单的实体</u>。

【4】。黑洞  $M_b$  发射霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  , 或者说  $m_{ss}$  从黑洞的视界半径  $R_b$  上逃离到外界的机理是与任何恒星和炽热物体向外发射辐射能的机理是相同的,都是由高温高能向低温低能自然流动的过程。只有用经典理论才能正确地解释黑洞  $M_b$  发射霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  。4-1\*.公式(1d)的物理意义.

黑洞质-能量  $M_b$ 在  $R_b$ 上对  $m_{ss}$ 的引力,按照

 $\underline{\mathbf{m}_{ss}}\underline{\mathbf{M}_{b}} = \mathbf{h}\mathbf{C}/8\pi\mathbf{G} = 1.187 \times 10^{-10}\mathbf{g}^{2}$  (1d) 在(1d) 等式的左右 2 边 ×  $\mathbf{2G/R_{b}}^{2}$ , 既然以  $\mathbf{R_{b}}^{2}$ 除

以 2 边,**就是表示已将 M\_b 看做中心力**,于是得,

$$2GM_bm_{ss}/R_b^2 = hC/4\pi R_b^2$$
 (4a)

由于  $m_{ss}M_b$  = const, 所以黑洞  $M_b$ 在其视界半径  $R_b$ 上对  $m_{ss}$ 的引力可视为 =  $F_{bg}$ ,它反比于  $R_b^2$ ,而与  $M_b$  和  $m_{ss}$ 的量无关。令

$$F_{bg} = 2GM_b m_{ss} / R_b^2 \tag{4b}$$

由(1c),  $2GM_b/R_b = C^2$ , 可变为,

$$2GM_{b}m_{ss}/R_{b}^{2} = m_{ss} \times C^{2}/R_{b}, \qquad (1c)$$

由(1c)可见, $2GM_bm_{ss}/R_b^2$  是黑洞  $M_b$  在其视界 半径  $R_b$  上对  $m_{ss}$  的引力  $F_{bg}$ ,而  $m_{ss} \times C^2/R_b$  则是  $m_{ss}$  以光速 C 在  $R_b$  作圆周运动(按广义相对论的说法是 测地线运动)的离心力  $F_{bc}$ 。所以,将(1c)和(1d)式转变后,都表示<u>黑洞引力  $F_{bg}$ 与离心力  $F_{bc}$ 在  $R_b$ 上的平衡。从 (4a), (1c) 和 (1d), 得,</u>

$$F_{bc} = hC/4\pi R_b^2 = m_{ss} \times (C^2/R_b)$$
 (4c)

可见, $F_{bc}$  表示  $m_{ss}$  在  $R_b$  上围绕  $M_b$  旋转时的离心力。因此,(1d) 就表示  $m_{ss}$  在  $R_b$  上围绕  $M_b$  旋转时, $M_b$  对  $m_{ss}$  的引力与其离心力的平衡,而  $C^2/R_b$  就是  $m_{ss}$  的离心加速度。

由于(4a)来源于(1d)、黑洞内的质量  $M_b$  就应该均匀地散布在黑洞  $R_b$  的球体空间内,而不是集中于黑洞的中心, $F_{bg} = 2GM_bm_{ss}/R_b^2$  已经将  $2M_b$  看成为在  $R_b$  中心的集中力,所以要想使  $m_{ss}$  在  $R_b$  的末端以光速 C 作圆周运动,在(1c) (1d)中, $M_b$  是分布粒子的引力,所以仅有  $M_b$  就能达到。当  $M_b$  在  $F_{bg}$  中作为集中力时,就必须有  $2M_b$  才行。这就是运用广义相对论公式与牛顿引力公式的显巨区别。于是得到,

$$F_{bg} = F_{bc} = 2GM_bm_{ss}/R_b^2 = hC/4\pi R_b^2 = m_{ss} \times (C^2/R_b)$$
 (4d)

验证: 由(4d),hC/ $4\pi R_b^2 = m_{ss} C^2/R_b$ ,而  $m_{ss} C^2 = Ch/2\pi\lambda_{ss}$ ,所以 hC/ $4\pi R_b = Ch/2\pi\lambda_{ss}$ ,所以  $2R_b = \lambda_{ss}$ ,见(4j)式和(63f). 可见上面的所有公式和证明都是完全一致的和正确的。

类似的, 运用牛顿力学, 在中心集中力的作用下, 中心引力  $F_{ne}$  与其离心力  $F_{ne}$  在  $R_b$ 上的平衡是,

$$F_{ng} = m_{ss} \times (GM_{bn}/R_b^2) \tag{4e}$$

$$F_{nc} = m_{ss} \times (C^2 / R_b) \tag{4f}$$

于是
$$(m_{ss} \times GM_{bn}/R_b^2) = m_{ss} \times (C^2/R_b)$$
 (4g)

比较(4g) 与 (4d)式, 在下式(4h)的的条件下, 二者是完全相等的。

$$2M_b = M_{bn} (4h)$$

 $\mathcal{M}(4h)$ 式可见,<u>产生相同效果的引力所需的质量,集中引力质量</u>  $M_{bn}$  <u>必须等于分布在整个空间质量</u>  $M_b$  的 2 倍。

4-2\*。辐射能包括霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  可以等量的互相转换成以下 3 种形式。 $\nu$ — 频率  $s^{-1}$ ,

$$\mathbf{m}_{ss}\mathbf{C}^2 = \kappa \mathbf{T}_b = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{h}/2\pi\lambda = \nu \mathbf{h}/2\pi \tag{4j}$$

霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  在  $R_b$  上的能量转换完全符合上面的公式(4i).

例如,我们太阳的表面温度大约是 5800k. 如将 5800k 看成为像黑洞在  $R_b$ 上的阀温  $T_b$ ,则相应的太阳表面辐射能的相当质量  $m_{sf}$ 为:  $m_{sf} = \kappa T_b/C^2 = 10^{-33}$ g,其相应的波长  $\lambda_{sf} = h/(2\pi Cm_{sf}) = 10^{-5}$ cm  $= 10^{-7}$ m. 这就清楚地表明,太阳只会发射较低能量的  $\lambda_{sf} > 10^{-7}$ m的电磁波、可见波、无线电波等。

相对应的,发射  $m_{sf}=10^{-33}$ g 的黑洞  $M_{b}=10^{23}$ g.

这证明,黑洞发射霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub> 与太阳发射可见光等的机理是相同的,都是高能高温粒子(辐射能)在其边界上向低温低能的外界自然地流动。有时太阳也向外界发射高能粒子和 X 射线等,那是其内部有爆炸而向外喷射粒子或高能辐射的结果。巨型黑洞也可能因内部产生爆炸而向外喷射粒子或辐射能。

在实质上,广义相对论与牛顿体系一样,都非绝对完善的体系。**计算的结果往往比观点更重要、 更说明问题**。因此,广义相对论假设辐射的光没有引力质量,只是作为一种解释的概念而已。

# 4-3\*.黑洞的霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub> 是如何从其视界半径 R<sub>b</sub> 上 逃到外界去的? 黑洞发射霍金辐射的机理。

作者认为,作为辐射能的  $m_{ss}$  在黑洞的  $R_b$  上由于有一定的温度  $T_b$  和相应的波长  $\lambda_{ss}$ . 于是  $m_{ss}$  总是在  $R_b$  上作微小的震动,其速度或振幅在每一瞬间都在极小的改变,当  $\underline{m}_{ss}$  有一半时间处在其温度和能量小于平均值时,它就可能离开  $R_b$  而暂时流向低温低能的外界。 于是黑洞由于失去一个  $m_{ss}$  而立即缩小  $R_b$  和提高  $T_b$ ,那个在外界  $m_{ss}$  由于黑洞视界半径上温度(能量)的提高,再也无法回到黑洞里去了,这就 成为黑洞发射到外界的霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub>。这其实是辐射能由高温高能向低温低能自然流动的过程,就像太阳发射可见光的机理与过程是同样的。

<u>霍金的黑洞发射霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub> 的理论是正确的。但由于霍金没有推导出 m<sub>ss</sub> 的公式,所以他对发射 m<sub>ss</sub> 机理的解释是不能令人信服的、不正确的。</u>

霍金与所有的主流科学家们都用狄拉克海的真 空能来解释黑洞视界半径 Rb 上发射霍金辐射 mss 的 机理。他们认为,真空狄拉克海里的虚粒子对都在 不断地产生和湮灭, 粒子对中的负虚粒子与黑洞视 界半径  $R_b$  上的霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  结合湮灭后,留在狄拉 克海中的正虚粒子就变成黑洞外空间的正粒子,它 就成为从黑洞逃出来的霍金辐射 mss 的化身。于是黑 洞就失去了(逃出来)一个霍金辐射 mss。这种用'狄 拉克海新物理概念'的解释是在无可奈何的'故弄玄 虚'。由公式(1d)可知,霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub>的量仅仅取 决于黑洞质量  $M_b$  的量, 而且  $M_b$  在发射一个  $m_{ss}$  之 后, M<sub>b</sub> 立即减小,下一个 m<sub>ss</sub> 立即变大。这是'没有 任何外力可以控制'一个黑洞连续发射 mss 的结果。 任一黑洞  $m_{ss}$ 量在不断地增加,最大将可达到  $10^{60}$  倍 (见后面的表二),相应地,黑洞外的狄拉克海中 的虚粒子对的能量也必须随着增加 1060 倍,才可能 与 mss配对后使其消失,这可能吗? 这必然导致狄拉 克海各处有无限大能量的虚粒子对的荒唐结论,这 正是惠勒等主流物理学家的悖论。再者,如果狄拉 克海中没有与黑洞 mee 相等能量的虚粒子对配对, 黑洞就无法向外发射霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub>了吗?这显然与实 情不相符。

【5】。<u>黑洞的寿命  $\tau_b$ </u>。黑洞  $M_b$ 连续发射霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ 而最后收缩为  $M_{bm} = m_p$ 的时间=黑洞的寿命  $\tau_{bm} = 10^{-42} s$ 。按照霍金黑洞的寿命公式,

$$\tau_b \approx 10^{-27} \,\mathrm{M_b}^{3 \,[1]}$$
 (5a)

对于真正最小黑洞  $M_{bl} = 2m_{ss} = 2M_{bm} = 2.2 \times 10^{-5}$  g,其寿命  $\tau_{blm} \approx 1.05 \times 10^{-41}$  秒。对于恒星级黑洞  $M_{bs} \approx 6 \times 10^{33}$  g,其 寿命 $\tau_{bs} \approx 10^{66}$  年。对于我们宇宙大黑洞,其  $M_{bu} \approx 10^{56}$  g,其寿命  $\tau_{bu} \approx 10^{133}$  年。

5-1\*; 以宇宙作为黑洞(证实宇宙是真实的黑洞的证明见后面)来判断其命运,寿命  $\tau$  ,的长短仅决定于  $M_b$  的量,这结论与广义相对论的弗里德曼模型是决然不同的。而且,弗里德曼模型只假想于判断宇宙的封闭还是开放,无法计算出各宇宙模型的寿命。

#### 5-2\*; 黑洞是对外界能量-物质贪得无厌的掠夺者。

从公式(1d)看,对于最小黑洞的  $m_{ss} = M_{bm} = m_p = 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g$ ,恒星级黑洞  $M_{bs}$  的  $m_{sss} = 10^{-44} g$ ,对于我们宇宙大黑洞  $M_{bu}$  的  $m_{ssu} \approx 10^{-66} g$ 。 因为宇宙中不存在小于恒星级黑洞  $M_{bs}$  的小黑洞,其发射  $m_{sss}$  和  $m_{ssu}$  是如此之微弱,而宇宙中的能量-物质的质量均大于  $m_{sss}$ ,而易于被黑洞吞噬。无论多么大的物质团

都可被大小黑洞分解吞噬,宇宙中没有任何力量可以切割开一个黑洞。因此,黑洞在人们眼中,就成为贪得无厌的掠夺者,直到将其外围的所有能量-物质吞噬完后,再向外慢慢吞吞地、单个地发射极其微弱的霍金辐射 mss。所以黑洞的生长时间 tg—即从形成到长大到吞噬完外界能量-物质的时间,相对于其衰亡时间 ta—即从发射霍金辐射到最后成为普朗克粒子的时间来说,是很小的数值,即 ta//te>>1。

5-3\*; 小黑洞吃掉大黑洞。 当大黑洞  $M_{bb}$  内有小黑洞洞  $M_{bl}$  时,因为 2 者向外发射发射的霍金辐射都很微弱,所以是  $M_{bl}$  先吃掉  $M_{bb}$  内所有的能量-物质后,而变成一个( $M_{bb}+M_{bl}$ )的大黑洞。然后,其生长衰亡的规律按照( $M_{bb}+M_{bl}$ )大黑洞运行。

【6】。 黑洞  $M_b$  和其霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  信息量  $I_B$  和熵  $S_B$ 。第一;无论  $M_b$  和  $m_{ss}$  的大小, $m_{ss}$  的信息量  $I_o$  三  $h/2\pi$  三 h

$$S_B = A/4L_p^{2} = 2\pi^2R_b^2C^3/hG^{[1]}$$
 (6a)

上式中,A为黑洞面积, $A = 4\pi R_b^2$ 。 $L_p$  为普朗克 长度,即,

$$L_p = (HG/C^3)^{1/2}$$
 [1] (6b)

(6a)式即有名的 Bekinstein-Hawking公式。再 从史瓦西公式(1c), $GM_b/R_b = C^2/2$ , $S_B = A/4L_p^2 = 4\pi R_b^2/(4GH/C^3) = 4\pi R_b^2 \times C^3/4GH = \pi R_b R_b C^3/GH = \pi \times C t_s \times 2GM_b C^3/GHC^2 = \pi 2 t_s \times M_b C^2/H$ , $t_s$  为光穿过黑洞的史瓦西半径 $R_b$ 的时间。于是有,

$$S_B \times (h/2\pi) = \pi (2t_s \times M_b C^2), \text{ EV},$$
  
 $S_B = \pi (2\pi/h) \times (2t_s \times M_b C^2)$  (6c)

在上面(6c)式中, $\mathbf{H} = (\mathbf{h}/2\pi) = \mathbf{I_0}$ ,海森伯测不准原理说,互补的两个物理量,比如时间和能量,位置和动量,角度和角动量,无法同时测准。它们测不准量的乘积等于某个常数,那个常数就是普朗克常数,即是 $\mathbf{h} = 6.63 \times 10^{-24}$ 焦耳秒= $6.63 \times 10^{-27}$  $\mathbf{g}_* \text{cm}^2/\text{s}_\circ$  取,

$$\underline{\underline{M}_{bm}}(=\underline{m}_{ss})\underline{C^2 \times 2t_{sbm}} = h/2\pi = \underline{I_o}$$

$$\Delta E \times \Delta t \approx h/2 \pi = \underline{I_o}$$
(6d)
(6e)

对比(6d)和(6e), (6e)式即是测不准原理的数学公式,可见, $2\underline{t}_{sbm}$ 对应于 $\Delta t$  时间测不准量, $M_{bm}C^2$ 对应于 $\Delta E$  — 能量测不准量。这初步说明黑洞发射霍金辐射的整个过程就是将能量—物质量子化的过程。

6-2\*; 求最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$ =普朗克粒子  $m_p$ = $(hC/8\pi G)^{1/2}$  g 的信息量 $I_o$ 和熵  $S_{Bbm}$ 。

下面根据普朗克粒子 $m_p$  的数据对 (6c)和(6d) 式进行验算。在前面【1】节里,证明了<u>宇宙中的最小黑洞 $M_{bm} = m_{ss} = m_p = (hC/8\pi G)^{1/2} = 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g$ ,其视界半径  $R_{bm} \equiv L_p \equiv (Gh/2\pi C^3)^{1/2} \equiv 1.61 \times 10^{-33}$  cm,其  $t_{sbm} = R_{bm}/C = 0.537 \times 10^{-43} s$ 。对普朗克粒子 $m_p$ 来说,其 $t_{sbm}$ 是其史瓦西时间。所以,对最小黑洞的计算是:</u>

 $2t_{sbm} \times M_{bm}C^2 = 2 \times 0.537 \times 10^{-43} \text{s} \times 1.09 \times 10^{-5} \text{g} \times 9 \times 10^{20} = 1.054 \times 10^{-27} \text{gcm}^2/\text{s}.$  (62a)

 $h/2\pi = 6.63 \times 10^{-27}/2\pi = 1.06 \times 10^{-27} g_* cm^2/s$  (62b) 由上2式的计算结果几乎完全相等,即,

$$2t_{\text{sbm}} \times M_{\text{bm}} C^2 = h/2\pi = H$$
 (62c)

上式说明 H 值不多不少 = 宇宙中最小黑洞即普朗克粒子的信息量。可见,最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub> = 普朗克粒子 m<sub>p</sub> 已经量子化为宇宙中一个最小的信息单位。 所以它无法分解为更多和更小的信息量,因为 M<sub>bm</sub>的寿命太短了,已经达到宇宙粒子寿命的最短极限。但是它的质-能量不是最小,可以分割。所以 m<sub>p</sub> 只能分解成更小的高能 γ-射线而有更长波长的低能射线之后,寿命都会变得更长,总信息量却能极大地增加。所以 m<sub>p</sub> 只能在普朗克领域解体消失。

下面计算  $m_p$  的熵  $S_{Bbm}$ , 按照 (6c)式,

 $S_B(h/2\pi) = \pi 2t_s \times M_{bm}C^2$ ,所以,

 $S_{Bbm} = \pi$ , 而  $I_o = 2t_{sbm} \times M_{bm} C^2 = h/2\pi$  (62d) 为什么量子化的常数,普朗克常数,会不多不少刚好是我们知道的这个数值?这个常数的具体数值到底有什么意义?这说明普朗克常数  $I_o = h/2\pi$  就是宇宙中最小黑洞  $M_{bm} = \oplus n$  的信息量,这也是宇宙中最小信息量,比  $h/2\pi$  更小的信息量在宇宙中不可能存在。而  $S_{Bbm} = \pi$ 是黑洞的最小熵。

方舟の女解释说: [11] '这个是什么意思呢?哲学上说,存在即是被感知,感知也就是信息的获得和传递,一样不携带信息的东西,是无法被感知的,所以信息也就是存在。所以,

### 信息= 存在= 能量×时间.

#### 普朗克常数 = 能量测不准量×时间测不准量

那么为什么存在=能量×时间呢?这个反映了存在的两个要素,存在的东西必须要有能量,没有能量,那也就是处于能量基态的真空,是不存在的。存在的东西也必须要持续存在一定的时间,如果一样东西只存在零秒钟,那便是不存在。[11]

她的看法很可能是对的,是可以被接受的。

6-3\*。任何黑洞  $M_b$  每次发射的任何一个霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  都只有最小的信息量 =  $I_o$  =  $h/2\pi$ ,而与其  $M_b$  和  $m_{ss}$  的数值大小无关。任何黑洞  $M_b$  的总信息量  $I_m$  =  $4GM_b^2/C$ , $M_b$  的总熵  $S_B = n_i \pi = \pi I_m/I_o$ 

 $\mathbf{I_o} = \mathbf{m_{ss}} \mathbf{C}^2 \times 2\mathbf{t_c} = \mathbf{C}^2 \mathbf{h} \mathbf{C} / (8\pi \mathbf{G} \mathbf{M_b}) \times 2\mathbf{R_b} / \mathbf{C} = \mathbf{C}^2 \mathbf{h} \mathbf{C} / (8\pi \mathbf{G} \mathbf{M_b}) \times 2 \times 2\mathbf{G} \mathbf{M_b} / \mathbf{C}^3 \equiv \mathbf{h} / 2\pi$ (63a)

(63a)证明任一黑洞的每一个  $m_{ss}$ , 无论大小, 其信息量都是  $I_o$ , 而与  $M_b$ 和  $m_{ss}$ 的量的大小无关。 只要知道黑洞在  $M_b$ 时所有的  $m_{ss}$ 的数目  $n_i$ ,就可以 知道该黑洞的总信息量  $I_m$ ,总熵  $S_{BM}$ 了。令,

$$I_{m} = n_{i}I_{o}$$
,  $S_{B} = n_{i} \pi = (\pi/I_{o}) I_{m}$ , (63b)

由于  $M_b = n_i m_{ss}$ ,  $I_m = I_0 M_b / m_{ss}$ , (63c)

再用(1d)式,从上面,  $\underline{I}_m = \underline{I}_0 \underline{M}_b / \underline{m}_{ss} = 4G\underline{M}_b^2 / \underline{C}$ 

(63d)

M(63b)  $R_{\rm o}$ ,  $S_{\rm B} = (\pi/I_{\rm o}) I_{\rm m} = (\pi/I_{\rm o}) \times 4GM_{\rm b}^2/C = 2\pi^2R_{\rm b}^2C^3/hG = S_{\rm B}$ , (63e)

(63e)与上面的(6a)式完全相同,这证明本文中所有公式的推导和计算完全是正确而圆满自洽的。

结论: A。由(63d)可知黑洞  $M_b$ 由于吞噬外界质-能量或者与其它黑洞合并而增加其质能量时,因  $I_m$  正比例于  $M_b{}^2$ ,如果  $M_b = M_{b1} + M_{b2}$ ,由于  $I_m \hookrightarrow (M_{b1} + M_{b2})^2$ ,而合并前  $I_{m1} \hookrightarrow M_{b1}{}^2$ , $I_{m2} \hookrightarrow M_{b2}{}^2$ ,合并后之  $I_m > I_{m1} + I_{m2}$ 。 所以 2 黑洞合并后总信息量  $I_m$ 是增加的、不守恒的。 同样,当黑洞  $M_b$  发射霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ 时,起初  $I_m \hookrightarrow M_b{}^2$ ,当  $M_b$  发射  $m_{ss}$  到 0.5  $M_b$ 之后,剩余的 0.5  $M_b$ 的信息量只有 0.25  $I_m$ ,而发射出去的 0.5  $M_b$  却带走了 0.75  $I_m$ 。当然, $I_m$ 的总量还是一样的。这是因为每个  $m_{ss}$ 的信息量  $I_o \equiv h/2\pi$ 。而黑洞  $M_b$ 大时, $m_{ss}$ 小,其波长 $\lambda_{ss}$ 较长,所以一个  $I_o$ 所需的  $m_{ss}$ 就较小。熵的情况与信息量的情况是相同的

- B。所有黑洞不论大小,每次只发射一个  $m_{ss}$  , 其信息量  $I_0 \equiv h/2\pi \equiv 1$  单位信息量。
- C。看来,只有能量才具有信息量。因此,黑洞 $M_b$  发射霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  就是物质转变为能量后才能带走信息量 $I_o$ 。
- **D**。在宇宙中,黑洞在吞噬外界能量—物质时,是最贪婪的饥饿鬼,来者不拒,多多益善。当它的外界空空如也,而向外界发射霍金辐射时,它是最小气的吝啬鬼,每次只向外吐出一份最小的信息量,黑洞愈大,愈吝啬。按照寿命公式计算,如果我们现在的宇宙黑洞外界也是空空如也的话,它相隔 $10^{12}$ 年才向外发射一个最微小的霍金辐射粒子  $m_{ss}=10^{-66}$ g。
- E。从(**4j**)式  $m_{ss}C^2 = (h/2\pi) \times C/\lambda_{ss}$ 中可得出,任何**霍金辐射 m\_{ss}的波长** $\lambda_{ss}$ 等于黑洞  $M_b$ **的直径**。

$$\lambda_{ss} = 2t_c C = 2R_b = D_b$$
 (63f)

由(63a) 式, v<sub>ss</sub> (s<sup>-1</sup>)为频率,

 $I_0 = h/2\pi = m_{ss}C^2 \times 2t_c = m_{ss}C^2 \times \lambda_{ss}/C$  (63g)

(63g)式表明,单位信息量I。是震动1次,即1个波长所具有的能量。因此,辐射波红移的本质就是保持I。不变,即I。是不可分割的。

辐射波的的本质:在行进、(传播)中是波, 在引力场附近会弯曲行进,一旦被阻隔而停止时就 是粒子。前面(4j)式就是其能量的转换关系公式,即 粒子的能量=1整个波长的能量。

【7】。霍金的恒星级黑洞塌缩前后的熵比公式(7a)的物理意义。

7-1\*。恒星级黑洞内部不可能出现'奇点'。

我们知道,当大质量恒星演化的末期,在其核 心的氢氦碳等元素在核聚变反应中耗尽后,经由引 力塌缩会产生超新星爆炸。根据原始恒星质量的大 小,其内部残骸可被压缩成为白矮星、中子星或者 恒星级黑洞等致密天体。无论是最终形成哪一种天 体, 都是由于超新星爆炸时, 其中心残骸受到爆炸 时超强的内压力压缩而成,其中心的最大密度可达 到 5×10<sup>15</sup>g/cm³ 而成为超子。恒星级黑洞 M<sub>bs</sub> 形成 后,内部因再无核聚变,不可能再发生超新星爆 炸。虽然超子的密度也许还可以增加到 5×10<sup>15</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> ~10<sup>52</sup>g/cm³,但不可能由黑洞内总质量自身的引力收 缩来达到,因为黑洞内部(热)能量在黑洞强引力 的束缚下,无法散到黑洞外面,黑洞内部的高温抗 力就会与其总质能自身的引力达到平衡,而且其较 高密度的超子核心结构完全能够承受和对抗黑洞内 质-能量自身的引力压缩,使其无法再继续收缩成为 奇点。 相对论学者们掩耳盗铃地不承认这事实。

霍金-彭罗斯和史瓦西度规等在解广义相对论方程得出物质团塌缩成'奇点'的证明就是不切实际和错误的。因为他们假设定量物质团的收缩不需向外界排除热量,就违反了热力学定律;其次,当物质团收缩出现黑洞之后,他们错误的在黑洞内外用同一个连续的方程。这些/发导致比较,'那么',来它发射的形体如恒星

要错误。

**7-2\*。**按照霍金的黑洞理论和熵公式,任何一个恒星在塌缩过程中,熵总是增加的。假设  $S_b$ —恒星塌缩前的熵, $S_a$ —塌缩后的熵, $M_\theta$ —太阳质量 =  $2\times 10^{33}$ g,  $S_a/S_b=10^{18}M_b/M_\theta^{[1]}$  (7a)

Jacob Bekinstein 指出,在<u>理想条件下</u>, $S_a = S_b$ ,就是说,熵在恒星塌缩的前后不变。这样,就从(7a)式可得出一个<u>黑洞  $M_{bo} = 10^{15}$ g。这个黑洞常被称之</u>为宇宙的原初小黑洞=  $M_{bo}$  [1]

 $M_{bo}$ =10<sup>15</sup>g 的密度  $\rho_{bo}$ = 0.7×10<sup>53</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>;  $R_{bo}$ =1.5×10<sup>-13</sup>cm;  $T_{bo}$ =0.77×10<sup>12</sup>k;  $m_{sso}$ =12×10<sup>-24</sup>g; (7b)

 $M_{bo}=10^{15}g$  所包含的核子数  $n_{bo}=10^{15}g$  /1.66× $10^{-24}=10^{39}$ . 恰等于静电力与引力之比,即狄拉克大数。 $M_{bo}$  的年龄按照(5a)式  $\tau_{bo}\approx$  我们宇宙年龄。其半径  $R_{bo}$  正是一个原子核的半径。霍金曾认为, $M_{bo}$  有可能残存在宇宙空间,科学家在 70 年代化 10 年寻找未果。

7-3\*。 从 Bekinstein 对恒星塌缩的前后熵不变的解释 可以得出有非常重要意义的结论。

Bekinstein 对霍金公式 (7a)只作了一个简单的数 学说明, 使其能够和谐地成立。但是没有给出其中 的恰当的物理意义。作者认为, (7a) 应该用于解释 恒星塌缩过程中有重要的物理含意。

首先, (7a) 表明在密度 < ρ<sub>bo</sub>=10<sup>53</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> 的塌缩 过程中是不等熵的。这表示质子(超子)作为粒子在此 过程中能够保持质子的结构没有被破坏分解,所以 质子才有热运动、摩擦和熵的改变。 质子变为超子  $\Lambda$  和  $\Sigma$  仅仅是质子具有高能量和高温,但它仍然由 夸克组成。其次, 既然密度从 1053g/cm3 到 1093g/cm3 的改变过程中,不管是膨胀还是收缩,熵不能改变, 这就是理想过程。因此,质子必须解体而不能再作 为粒子, 也就是说, 质子在此过程中只能分解为夸 克。换言之, 夸克就是没有热运动和摩擦可在密度  $10^{53}$ g/cm<sup>3</sup> 和  $10^{93}$ g/cm<sup>3</sup>之间作理想过程的转变的.

重要的结论: 现在宇宙中所能产生的最强烈的爆 炸是超新星爆炸,它们所能产生的最大压力只能将 物质压缩成密度约 5×10<sup>15</sup> g/cm³ 的中子星或最小的恒 **星级黑洞的核心,即超子 \Lambda 或 \Sigma 。**实际上,在恒星 级黑洞的塌缩过程中总熵是增加的, 因为要向外抛 射出大量的能量-物质。所以,从密度  $5\times10^{15}$ g/cm<sup>3</sup> 到 10<sup>53</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> 的塌缩或膨胀过程就是非等熵过程,质 子的结构未被破坏。这特性也许就是质子在宇宙中 有 1030 年的长寿命而难以被破坏的原因。在密度从 10<sup>53</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> 到为普朗克粒子 m<sub>n</sub> 密度的 10<sup>93</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>的塌 缩或膨胀过程是等熵的理想过程中,质子已经解体 成为**夸克。**既然夸克在过程中作等熵运动,表明与 胶子在一起的夸克可能是具有超导性的液体,它们 可以一直存在到密度达到 10<sup>93</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> 的普朗克领域, 而成为阻止任何物体和黑洞内部质量引力塌缩的坚 实核心。

在爱因斯坦建立广义相对论的时代,他只知道 引力和电磁力这 2 种长程力,在其作用下,物质所 能达到的最大密度,是太阳中心的密度约为  $10^2$ g/cm<sup>3</sup>。那时,不知道还有核心密度为  $10^6$ g/cm<sup>3</sup> 的白矮星和密度为 10<sup>16</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> 的中子星。更不知道弱 作用力和强作用力可以组成密度为 10<sup>16</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>~ 10<sup>53</sup>g/cm³的质子,和密度为 10<sup>53</sup>g/cm³~10<sup>93</sup>g/cm³的 夸克。因此, 那时爱因斯坦和其他的科学家们想当 然的认为,物质粒子的引力可以自由而无休止地收 缩和增大密度而达到'奇点'。这是可以被理解的 历史原因。然而,现在主流的的科学家们还固执的 坚持物质粒子的引力可以收缩而压碎其中心坚实的 核心,再继续塌陷成为"奇点",这却是盲目而失 去理智的。

### 【8】。人类也许永远不可能制造出任何真正的人造 引力(史瓦西)黑洞

其实, 道理很简单, 最小黑洞 Mb1 = 2.2×10-<sup>5</sup>**g , 其** R<sub>b1m</sub>=3.22×10<sup>-33</sup>cm, 其史瓦西时间和寿命  $t_{s1}=10^{-43}$ s。但一个质子的质量  $p_m=1.66\times10^{-24}$ g。由 于不可能存在小于  $M_{bl} = 2M_{bm} = 2.2 \times 10^{-5} g$  的黑洞, 这就必须要将 10<sup>20</sup>个质子 pm 在极其准确的瞬时在对 **撞机上对撞**,这做得到吗? **更困难的是**,相邻质子 之间的最短距离是  $10^{-13}$ cm (中子星密度), 2 个质 子如以光速的速度,需要 10-24 秒的时间才能碰在一 起, 而**最小黑洞 M**bl 的寿命才 10<sup>-41</sup> 秒, 相差是 10<sup>17</sup> 数量级。就是说,最小黑洞 M<sub>bl</sub> 即便制造出来了, 也不可能存在和长大,因在其极短的寿命内,得不 到能量的供给。因此,一些科学家叫嚣制作出人造 黑洞,或者黑洞炸弹,都是骗人和骗钱的鬼话。

第二篇 黑洞理论和宇宙学完善地结合成为'黑洞宇宙学' ==新黑洞理论论证了宇宙起源于最小黑洞,而不是'奇点'== \*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

本文对宇宙学的新观点是完全建立在上面黑洞理论新发展的基层之上的。

本篇【1】到【5】---用黑洞理论的新观念和公式证明我们宇宙诞生于在普郎克领域 Planck Era 新生成的大 量原初最小黑洞  $M_{hl}=2M_{hm}=2m_{n}=2(hC/8\pi G)^{1/2}\equiv 2.2\times 10^{-5}g$ ,即普朗克粒子  $m_{n}$ 的合并,而不是诞生于 "奇点"或"奇点的大爆炸"。【6】--证明<u>我们现在宇宙是一个质量为 10<sup>56</sup>g 的真正的巨无霸宇宙黑洞</u> (CBH)。【7】--宇宙原初暴涨(Original Inflation)的新机理和新证明。【8】。从宇宙 7 种大小不同的 黑洞 M, 的演变来分析黑洞宇宙的演变。【9】。用计算验证宇宙大爆炸标准模型图一与黑洞宇宙演变表二 的一致性。

【1】。我们宇宙的演化规律与公式:根据近代宇宙 天文学、粒子物理学和量子力学的最新成就,对我们 Era  $t = \pm 10^{-43}$  秒膨胀到宇宙到辐射时代 Radiation Era  $t = \pm 10^{-43}$  秒膨胀到宇宙到辐射时代 Radiation Era  $t = \pm 10^{-43}$  秒膨胀到宇宙列辐射时代 Radiation Era宇宙的演化规律,即其参数 t, R, T 之间的数值关  $t=1/3\times10^6$ 年结束,其膨胀的规律的近似公式如下, 系可用如下公式和【9】节图一大致正确的表示出 来。

当宇宙从我们所知道和假定的诞生时刻 Planck

$$Tt^{1/2} = k_1, R = k_2 t^{[\pm]}, TR^{1/2} = k_3^{[2]}$$
 (1a)

t-宇宙的特征膨胀时间, R-宇宙的特征尺度或 大小, T—宇宙辐射温度, k<sub>1</sub>,k<sub>2</sub>,k<sub>3</sub>—常数。

宇宙在物质占统治地位时代 Matter-dominated Era, 从  $t = 1/3 \times 10^6$  年到现今的膨胀的规律公式如下, $k_6$ k<sub>7</sub>, k<sub>8</sub>为常数,

$$Tt^{2/3} = k_6$$
,  $R = k_7t^{2/3}$ ,  $TR = k_8$ , [2] (1b) [注]。原文是  $R = k_2t^{1/2}$ , 详见下面的第【9】节。

【2】。根据什么原理来确定我们宇宙准确的诞生时 刻 tm? 既然我们宇宙过去按照上面的(1a)公式膨胀, 我们就可以按(1a)往缩小方向回推,以便找到宇宙较 准确的、有根据的诞生时刻 tm。上面所提到的,下面 将论证宇宙在  $t = 10^{-43}$ s 时,是不是要找到的  $t_m$ ?

我们宇宙能连成一个整体,在于宇宙中所有物 质粒子之间有足够的时间以光速  $\mathbb{C}$  传递他们彼此之  $1.732\times10^{10}$ )] =  $0.075758\times10^{-74}\times1.732\times10^{10}$ 间的引力。其充要条件是 R ≤ Ct。R 是宇宙的视界半 径,t是宇宙特征膨胀时间,即从其中心将引力能以 光速 C 传递到 R 末端的时间(非宇宙年龄),因此 才能将 R 内的总质能 m 联系在一起。由上面(1a)膨胀 公式可知, $R = k_2 t_1$  当 t 一直缩小下去时,就会达到 一个极限, 使  $R \ge Ct$ 。因为当 t 缩小时, R 和 m 减 小,按照哈勃定律,密度成  $\rho^2$  增加,质能会形成许 多高温高密度的粒子团,从第一篇可知,这实际上是 在向最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub>= m<sub>p</sub>普朗克粒子方向收缩。当 t 继 续减小下去时,那些粒子团(其实是黑洞)的温度和 密度最终会高到无法被压(收)缩,使 R 无法再缩 小。于是最终也会达到一个极限,达到  $R \ge Ct$ 。这 即造成相邻粒子之间无足够时间传递彼此的引力,也 造成任何粒子的中心引力无法传递到其边界,在此时 刻 tm 就造成了宇宙内所有粒子内外的引力断链, 变 成能量的碎末,无法继续收缩成'奇点'。但从宇宙 诞生膨胀的方向看,正是在此时刻 tm, 宇宙中的高 密度质-能会重新聚集形成新的质-能粒子团而恢复其 内外引力,此时 tm就成为我们新宇宙诞生的时刻。

# 【3】。求宇宙诞生时,恢复引力链的那一时刻 tm, 和重新结合成新粒子 mm,

设 dm--两相邻粒子间的实际距离, m -宇宙退缩 到最后引力断链时的粒子团质量, r-粒子 m 的半 径, t 一宇宙粒子的引力从中心传递到其视界半径的 特征时间, 即史瓦西时间, C—光速, ρ—宇宙和粒子 m的能量-物质密度 g/cm³, H一哈勃常数,于是,

$$d_{\rm m} \geqslant C \times 2t$$
,  $\mathbb{P} d_{\rm m}/2C \geqslant t$ , (3)

d<sub>m</sub>是粒子团内外引力断链条件,

$$m = 4\pi \rho R^3/3, \tag{3aa}$$

H = 哈勃常数, 宇宙在同一时间的常数, <math>H = V/R

已知 
$$4\pi \rho r^3/3 = m$$
,  $m = \kappa T/C^2$ ,

$$\therefore t^3 \le 3\kappa T/4\pi\rho C^5 \tag{3a}$$

$$\pm \rho = 3H^2/8\pi G = 3/(8\pi Gt^2),$$
 (3ba)

$$\therefore t \le T(2G\kappa)/(C^5), \tag{3b}$$

从(1a),  $Tt^{1/2} = \overline{k_1}$ (3ca)

∴  $t^{3/2} \le k_1 (2G\kappa)/C^5$ 或者  $t \le [k_1 (2G\kappa)/C^5]^{2/3}$  (3c) 公式 (3a),(3b),(3c)都是从公式 (3) 推导出来的, 所以三式中的 t 是等值的。

现求 t 值如下: 先从下面【9】节图一或从第一 篇【1】节中选取普朗克粒子相对应的参数作为 t, T 值代入(1a)求  $k_1$ , 取  $t = 10^{-43}$  s, 其温度  $T = 10^{32}$ k, 如 是, $k_1 = Tt^{1/2} = 10^{32} \times 10^{-43} \text{s} = 3^{1/2} \times 10^{10} \approx 1.732 \times 10^{10}$ 

从公式 (3c).

 $t^{3/2} \le [(2G\kappa)/(C^5)] \times k_1 = 1.732 \times 10^{10} [(2G\kappa)/(C^5)] \times k_2 = 1.732 \times 10^{10} [(2G\kappa)/(C^5)] \times k_3 = 1.732 \times 10^{10} [(2G\kappa)/(C^5)] \times k_3$  $G = 6.67 \times 10^{-8} \text{cm}^3/\text{gs}^2$ ,  $C = 3 \times 10^{10} \text{cm/s}$ ,  $\kappa = 1.38$  $\times 10^{-16}$  gcm/s  $^{2}$ k,,

 $\therefore \quad \mathbf{t}^{3/2} \leq [(2 \times 6.67 \times 10^{-8} \times 1.38 \times 10^{-16})/(3 \times 10^{10})^{5}] \times$ 

≈ 0.1312×10<sup>-64</sup>, 于是,

 $t^3 = 0.017217 \times 10^{-128} = 0.17217 \times 10^{-129}$ .

为计算方便, 下面令 t=tm; 于是,

可见, t 与 tm 即是粒子与整个宇宙中相邻粒子之 间引力断链的时间。相对应地,粒子的温度  $T_m$ ,

$$T_m = k_1/t^{1/2} = 1.732 \times 10^{10}/(0.5563 \times 10^{-43})^{1/2}$$

$$= 0.734 \times 10^{32} k, \tag{36}$$

 $m_m$  是与  $0.734 \times 10^{32} k$  相对应粒子质量:

$$\underline{\mathbf{m}}_{\mathbf{m}} = \kappa T/C^2 = 1.38 \times 10^{-16} \times 0.734 \times 10^{32} / (9 \times 10^{20}) = 1.125 \times 10^{-5} \mathbf{g}, \tag{3f}$$

$$\rho = 3/(8\pi Gt^2) = 0.5786 \times 10^{93} \text{g/cm}^3,$$
 (3g)

从公式(3aa),  $m_m$ 的半径  $r_m$ ,

$$r_m = (3m/4\pi\rho)^{1/3} = 1.67 \times 10^{-33} \text{cm},$$
 (3h)

 $d_m = C \times 2t = 3.34 \times 10^{-33} cm$ 

$$d_m \ge 2 r_m (=3.34 \times 10^{-33} cm)$$
 (3i)

$$\therefore (d_{\rm m} \ge 2r_{\rm m}) \tag{3j}$$

(3j) 表明当我们宇宙退缩到 mm时, 2 邻近粒子之 间的引力却是断链了。断链前由粒子 mm 组成整个 "宇宙包"里的密度 ρ,,,

$$\rho_{\rm u} = {\rm m_m/d_m}^3 = 0.302 \times 10^{93} {\rm g/cm}^3$$
 $\rho_{\rm u} < \rho, 表明 {\rm m_m}$ 解体前有空隙。
(3k)

### 【4】。我们宇宙出生时,恢复引力断链的新粒子

mm, 它们就是构成我们现在宇宙的基本单元和粒 子,**其实就是第一篇中的<u>最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub>=(hC/8πG)<sup>1/2</sup></u>** = 普朗克粒子  $m_p=1.09\times10^{-5}$ g 。 将上节计算的  $m_m$ 与 M<sub>bm</sub>和 m<sub>n</sub>的比较结果列在下面的表一中。

由表一中的数据可知,恢复引力的新粒子 mm就 <u>是最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$  = 普朗克粒子  $m_0=1.09\times10^{-5}$  g。</u>其 原材料来源于普朗克领域中的零散的、碎小的能量粒 子,是它们结合成了新  $M_{hm} = m_{n}$ 。表一中  $m_{m}$ 之所以 不完全等于  $M_{hm} = m_n$ , 只能是在计算时求  $k_1$ ,  $m_m$ , t m, Tm等的误差所引起。

#### 表一: M<sub>bm</sub>, m<sub>p</sub> 和 m<sub>m</sub> 的各种参数的比较

<u>m</u> <u> 引力断链状态</u>	<b>M<sub>bm</sub>_最小黑洞</b>	
$m_{m} = 1.125 \times 10^{-5} g$	$M_{bm} = 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g$	$m_{p}=1.09\times10^{-5}g$
$t_{\rm m} = \pm 0.5563 \times 10^{-43} {\rm s}$	$t_{\rm bm} = 0.539 \times 10^{-43} \rm s$	$t_p = 0.539 \times 10^{-43} s$ ,
$T_{m} = 0.734 \times 10^{32}$	$T_{bm} = 0.71 \times 10^{32} k$	$T_p = 0.71 \times 10^{32} k$
$\underline{\mathbf{r}}_{\mathbf{m}} = \underline{\mathbf{d}}_{\mathbf{m}}/2 = 1.67 \times 10^{-33} \text{cm}$	$R_{bm} = 1.61 \times 10^{-33} cm$	$\underline{L_p} = 1.61 \times 10^{-33} \text{cm},$

# 【5】。<u>在前辈宇宙消失在普朗克领域之后,我们的</u> 新宇宙是如何从普朗克领域诞生出来的?

如果我们现在宇宙的所有能量-物质都来自前辈宇宙,按照时间对称原理,很显然,假设一个前辈大宇宙有一次大塌缩,其最后的塌缩规律与我们宇宙诞生时的膨胀规律近似,其最后塌缩的结果只会同时产生 3 种状态,如上面的表一所示,即相邻粒子  $m_m$ 之间的引力断链、成为最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$  和普朗克粒子  $m_p$ ,即  $m_m = M_{bm} \equiv m_p$ 、在上一篇已经论证了  $M_{bm} = m_p$  只能爆炸解体消亡在普朗克领域。这是宇宙诞生前的一次"大爆炸",或可称之为'前大爆炸'。

前辈宇宙塌缩成为 M<sub>bm</sub> = m<sub>p</sub> 在普朗克领域的 '前大爆炸'的 3 种结果为我们宇宙的诞生提供了充分和必要的条件: 1\*。'前大爆炸'使前辈宇宙发生 '相变',即从'塌缩相'转变为'膨胀相',从而阻止前辈宇宙继续塌缩成为'奇点' 2\*。'前大爆炸'使宇宙密度和温度的少许降低而使宇宙中能够产生比 M<sub>bm</sub> 稍大、寿命比 M<sub>bm</sub> 史瓦西时间稍长的'新小黑洞' M<sub>bl</sub>,他们才是我们新生宇宙的、能够稳定成长的实际细胞。 3\*。'前大爆炸'M<sub>bm</sub>= m<sub>p</sub> 解体后的能量物质碎末,为转变组成为新宇宙的'新细胞'(新的最小黑洞 M<sub>bl</sub>)提供了所有的能量-物质,它们的出现就是我们新宇宙的诞生。

我们新宇宙是如何从旧宇宙的废墟中诞生的呢? <u>关键问题在于从旧宇宙解体的废旧能量-物质,能够</u> <u>重新集结成为新的稍长寿命的最小引力(史瓦西)黑</u> <u>洞 M<sub>bl</sub> = 2M<sub>bm</sub>. 其实,在 10<sup>32</sup>k 和密度 10<sup>93</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>如此 高的普朗克领域,本来就是能量与粒子随时都在湮灭 和产生而互相转换的。</u>我们知道它们湮灭和产生的时间就是康普顿时间,即 Compton Time t<sub>c</sub> = 史瓦西时间 t<sub>s</sub>。 因此,<u>只有当新生粒子的寿命τ<sub>b</sub>大于康普顿时间</u> <u>tc时,该粒子才能存活下来,生长下去,而成为稳定的新小黑洞。</u>上篇中已经论证过,黑洞一旦形成,除 因发射霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub> 而最后变为普朗克粒子 m<sub>p</sub> 而爆 炸消失外,<u>它将永远是一个黑洞。</u>按照霍金的黑洞寿 命公式,黑洞寿命τ<sub>b</sub>,

$$\tau_b \approx 10^{-27} M_b^3 \text{ (s)}$$
 $t_c = t_s = R_b/C$  (5a)

因此,只有在 $\tau_b > t_s$ 时,即  $10^{-27}$   $M_b^3 > R_b/C$  时,新产生的新黑洞  $M_{bl}$  才能存活,</u>并吞噬外界能量 -物质而不断地长大,从(**5a**) (5b)公式,即可得出,

$$\frac{\underline{M_b} = \underline{M_{bl}} = 2.2 \times 10^{-5} g (2 \underline{M_{bm}})}{\underline{M_{bl}} \hat{D} \hat{F} \hat{m} \tau_{bl} = 10^{-27} \underline{M_{bl}}^3 = 10^{-27} (2.2 \times 10^{-5} g)^3,$$

$$\tau_{b1} = 1.06 \times 10^{-41} \text{s} = (5d)$$

$$\tau_{b1}/\tau_{bm} = \tau_{b1}/t_{bm} = (2.2/1.09)^3 = 8$$
 (5e)

可见, $M_{bl}$ 的寿命 $\tau_{b1}$ 比最小黑洞 $M_{bm} = m_{p}$ 的寿命 $t_{bm}$ 增长约8倍多。而且 $M_{bl}$ 的史瓦西时间 $t_{bl} = 10^{-43}$ s, $\tau_{bl} \approx 100 \ t_{bl}$ . 这就是 $M_{bl}$ 能稳定而继续长大的原因。

在当时'宇宙包'里如此高密度 $\approx 10^{93}$ g/cm³下,密度和温度因'前大爆炸'的膨胀而少许降低,**是很容易形成稍大的**  $\mathbf{M_{bl}} = 2\mathbf{M_{bm}}$ 新最小黑洞的。

宇宙诞生的'大爆炸': 一旦  $M_{bl}$ 形成之后,它们的合并碰撞将它们连在一起,由最小黑洞变成稍大的黑洞,而产生'大爆炸',造成宇宙的'空间大暴涨',这就是宇宙初生时短暂的"原初暴涨"。这时的大爆炸就是我们宇宙诞生时的所谓的'大爆炸'。无数的  $M_{bl}$  在成为我们新生的宇宙的胚胎时,它们立即的合并碰撞和互相连接在一起,造成了我们宇宙诞生的'大爆炸'、"原初暴涨"和膨胀的机理和过程。"原初暴涨"后,最小黑洞长成为较大的'原初小黑洞 $M_{bo}=10^{15}$ g'。它们再继续合并和吞噬外界能量-物质造成的膨胀形成了我们现在 137 亿年的膨胀宇宙。

**结论**: 我们宇宙诞生的 <u>几个必要条件</u>和过程是: 1\*。必有前辈宇宙及其无数的最小黑洞  $M_{bm} = m_p = 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g$  的消亡为我们宇宙提供了能量-物质基础。 2\*。前辈宇宙最后在普朗克粒子的爆炸解体使宇宙从'塌缩相'转变为'膨胀箱',避免了宇宙出现'奇点'。 3\*。前辈宇宙及其旧的最小黑洞  $M_{bm} = m_p$  的爆炸使"宇宙包"里的温度密度降低,而能够产生较大的较长寿命的稳定的新最小黑洞  $M_{bl}$  成为产生新宇宙的胚胎。没有  $M_{bl} = 2.2 \times 10^{-5} g$  成为极大量的胚胎,就不可能有我们现在的巨无霸宇宙,因只有黑洞才能不让能量-物质流失出去,并吞噬外界的能量-物质而长大。

【6】。完全论证我们现在宇宙是一个质量为 $10^{56}$ g的 真正的巨无霸宇宙黑洞(cosmic-BH, CBH)。我们 宇宙的膨胀就是大量的最小黑洞  $2M_{bm}=2m_{ss}=M_{bl}$  在宇宙初期合并和以后不断合并产生膨胀的结果。 Hubble定律就是我们宇宙最小黑洞不断合并和吞噬 外界能量-物质而膨胀的规律。宇宙的平直性( $\Omega=\rho_{r}$ / $\rho_{o}=1$ )就是宇宙黑洞的本性。

**6--1\*.** 现代精密的各种天文望远镜实际的观测数据表明,我们宇宙球体具有精密而可靠的数据。

(A),观测我们宇宙真实可靠的年龄  $A_u = 137$  亿年.于是,由此计算出,其视界半径  $R_u = C \times A_u =$ 

所以,宇宙的总质量  $M_u = 8.8 \times 10^{55}$ g.

(B). Hubble 常数的实际的可靠的观测数值是 H<sub>o</sub>= (0.73±0.05) × 100kms<sup>-1</sup>Mpc<sup>-1</sup>, 由此算出宇宙的实 际密度  $\rho_r = 3H_0^2/(8\pi G) \approx 10^{-29} \text{g/cm}^3$ . 并得出宇宙年龄  $A_r^2 = 3/(8\pi G \rho_r)$ ,  $A_r = 0.423 \times 10^{18} s = (134 \pm 6.7) \text{ }$ 年。故**宇宙的总质量可大致确定为 M\_r = 8.6 \times 10^{55} g\_o** 

由此可见,两种不同的精确测量数据所得出的结 果几乎完全一致。因此,取我们宇宙的数据如下作为 后面计算的原始数据。取宇宙总质量 M<sub>n</sub> = 8.8×10<sup>55</sup>g. 则宇宙年龄 Au = 137 亿年. 视界半径 Ru= 1.3×10<sup>28</sup> cm. 宇宙密度  $\rho_{\rm u} = 0.958 \times 10^{-29} \,{\rm g/cm^3} \approx 10^{-29} \,{\rm g/cm^3}$ .

6-2\*。假如我们现在宇宙是一个真实的巨无霸宇宙黑 洞 (CBH), 按照质能不灭原理, 它就必然来自大量字 **宙最小黑洞 M<sub>bl</sub>≈ 2M<sub>bm</sub>的合并。**为计算方便,现仍取 最小黑洞  $M_{bm} \equiv m_p = m_{ss} = 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g$ , 其  $R_{bm} = 1.61 \times$  $10^{-33}$  cm, 其 $T_{bm} = 0.71 \times 10^{32}$ k, 令  $N_{bu}$  是  $M_u$  拥有原始  $M_{bm}$ 的数目。如取 $M_{bl} \approx 2 M_{bm}$ 来计算,结果与取 $M_{bm}$ 是一样的。因Mbl=2Mbm的各种参数都同比增加。

 $N_{hu}=M_{u}/M_{hm}=8.8\times10^{55}/1.09\times10^{-5}=8.073\times10^{60}$  (6a) 假如我们宇宙是一个由 Nbu 个 Mbm 合并而成的宇 宙黑洞,那么,按照(1c)式,宇宙的  $R_u$ 也应该准确地是  $R_{bm}$  的  $N_{bu} = 8 \times 10^{60}$  倍。计算结果如下:

 $N_{hu}=R_{u}/R_{hm}=1.3\times10^{28}/1.61\times10^{-33}=8.075\times10^{60}$  (6b) (6a) = (6b)清楚地证明,我们宇宙 M<sub>u</sub>确实是由  $N_{bu}$ 个最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$ ,合并膨胀而成的宇宙黑洞。

6-3\*。宇宙膨胀的 Hubble 定律就是宇宙黑洞吞噬外 界能量-物质和其它黑洞合并而膨胀的规律。

将 Hubble 定律运用到我们宇宙球体的视界,

 $\mathbf{M_u} = 4\pi \rho_0 \mathbf{R_u}^3 / 3 = 4\pi (3H_0^2 / 8\pi G) C^3 t_u^3 / 3 = 4\pi (3H_0^2 / 8\pi G)$  $/8\pi \text{ G})\text{C}^3\text{t}_{\text{u}}/3\text{H}_0^2 = \text{C}^3\text{t}_{\text{u}}/2\text{G} = \text{C}^2\text{ R}_{\text{u}}/2\text{G}$ 

从史瓦西公式(1c),  $2GM_b = C^2R_b$ ,

 $\mathbf{M_h} = R_b C^2 / 2 G = C^3 t_{bu} / 2G = \mathbf{R_{bu}} C^2 / 2G$  (6d)

现在由于 $\underline{t_u} = \underline{t_{bu}}, \underline{R_{bu}} = \underline{R_u}, \underline{M_u} = \underline{M_b}$ . 因此, (6c) = (6d). 从而证实我们宇宙是一个真正的宇宙黑洞, 黑洞只有在吞噬外界能量-物质或者与其它黑洞合并 才产生膨胀。因此 Hubble 定律所反应的宇宙质-能量 随时间增长而正比例增长的规律,这是黑洞吞噬外界 能量-物质和其它黑洞合并的膨胀规律。**什么时候 tu** ≠ t<sub>m</sub>? 一旦黑洞吞噬完外界能量-物质, 黑洞就会停止 膨胀,而改变为不停地发射霍金辐射,以减少 Mu 和  $R_{\text{bu}}$ ,此时宇宙年龄  $t_{\text{u}} \neq t_{\text{bu}}$  黑洞的史瓦西时间, $t_{\text{u}}$  继 续增长,Hubble 定律也就失效了。于是哈勃常数 H 变为极其微小、接近于 0 的负值极其缓慢的增加, tbu 也极其缓慢的减小。

6-4\*。关于我们宇宙的<u>"平直性"问题,即( $\Omega = \rho_r / \rho_o$ </u>  $\approx 1$ )问题。黑洞的平均密度  $\rho_0$  在确定的质-能  $M_b$  下只

 $1.3 \times 10^{28}$  cm, 密度  $\rho_u$ =  $3/(8\pi G A_u^2)$  =  $0.958 \times 10^{-29}$  g/cm<sup>3</sup>. 有一个确定值。我们宇宙作为一个真正的宇宙黑洞是 有一确定  $\rho_0$  的、密封的巨大球体,所以( $\Omega = \rho_r / \rho_0$ ≡1) 是黑洞的本性, 是必然的结果。因此, 60 年 来,科学家们根据弗里德曼的不实结论,对( $\Omega = \rho_r$  /  $\rho_0 \approx 1$ )的争论是一个毫无意义的伪命题。

> 由 6-1\*中可知, 此地  $\rho_0 = \rho_u = 0.958 \times 10^{-29}$  $g/cm^3$ ,而  $\rho_r = \rho_r = 3H_o^2/(8\pi G) \approx 10^{-29} g/cm^3$ 。所以, $\Omega$  $= \rho_r / \rho_o = 10^{-29} / 0.958 \times 10^{-29} = 1.044$ 。但是,对于宇宙 黑洞来说, $\rho_0 \equiv \rho_r$ ,所以 $\Omega \equiv 1$ ,而现在的 $\Omega = 1.044$ 只不过是根据不实的弗里德曼模型理论所观测和计算 出来的错误结果。

> 由于广义相对论提出了错误的命题 ( $\Omega = \rho_r / \rho_o \neq$ 1), 已经导致许多科学家提出某些错误的观念, 比如 最明显地是"寻找宇宙丢失的能量-物质", 其次"零 点能"与"暗能量"等也与此有关。因此,从公式(6a) 和 (6b)来看,我们宇宙黑洞 CBH 一点能量-物质也未 丢失,一点也不少,当然一点也不多。

> 从现在起,如果宇宙黑洞外面没有能量-物质, 宇宙黑洞就会开始发生霍金辐射而不停地收缩,直到 最后收缩成为最小黑洞--M<sub>bm</sub> 而爆炸消失,宇宙的年 龄就是约为  $\tau_{bu} = 10^{-27} \text{ M}_{b} \text{ (s)} = 10^{-27} (8.8 \times 10^{55})^3 \approx 10^{132}$ 年. 如果外面还有能量-物质, 宇宙黑洞会继续吞噬外 界能量-物质而扩大,只有在吞噬完所有外界能量-物 质后,才会不停地发射黑洞霍金辐射而最后收缩成为 M<sub>bm</sub> 消失。其年龄按(5a)式计算>>10<sup>132</sup>年。

> 【7】。作者用宇宙诞生于"最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub>的合并" 原理,对宇宙"原初暴涨"的机理、过程和终结提出 了最新最简单的解释和计算。认为宇宙"原初暴涨" 终结的时间 t<sub>0</sub>就是宇宙总质能 M<sub>11</sub>内所有'原生最小 黑洞 M<sub>bl</sub>' 连成一整体,而造成宇宙黑洞'空间暴 涨'的宇宙时间。

> 从上节可知,我们现在黑洞宇宙的总质量是 M<sub>u</sub>  $= 8.8 \times 10^{55}$ g, 它来自宇宙诞生时  $N_{bu} = 8 \times 10^{60}$  个最小 黑洞  $M_{bm} \equiv m_p = 1.09 \times 10^{-5}$  的合并。因此,我们宇宙 黑洞的 137 亿年的膨胀就是那诸多最小黑洞合并所产 生的膨胀。**现将从宇宙诞生到将原始"宇宙包"内所** 有组成 Mu 的最小黑洞 Nbu×Mbm 连成一整体的时间定 为 t<sub>o</sub>,那时 M<sub>bm</sub>的视界半径 R<sub>bm</sub>=1.61×10<sup>-33</sup> cm。 7-1\*。 假设 Mbm 在诞生后需要 2 或者 3 倍的 tbm 时间 将其邻近的 Nm 个 Mhm 连接起来, thm 是最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$  的史瓦西时间,  $t_{bm}=R_{bm}/C=1.61\times10^{-33}/(3\times10^{10})=$ 5.37×10<sup>-44</sup>s. 当光(引力) 走 2×t<sub>bm</sub>时, M<sub>bm</sub> 所能够 连接的其它的  $M_{bm}$  的数目为  $N_{bm2}$ ,

$$N_{m2} R_{bm}^3 = (2R_{bm})^3, : N_{m2} = 8$$
 (7a)

(7a) 式表明, 当 M<sub>bm</sub>的引力传递时间从 t<sub>bmc</sub> 延长 到  $2t_{bmc}$ 时, $M_{bm}$  能够连接  $8 \cap M_{bm}$  那么,  $M_{bm}$  需要 延长多少倍时间才能将所有  $M_u$  中的  $N_{bu}$ = 8.075 ×  $10^{60}$ 个 M<sub>bm</sub>连成一体呢?

$$N_{\text{bu}} = 8.8 \times 10^{60} \approx 10^{61} = (8^{67.5})$$
 (7b)

(7b) 式表明,在  $M_{hm}$  的引力走过 ( $2^{67.5}$  )倍的  $t_{hms}$ 后,所有的  $N_{bu}$  (=8<sup>67.5</sup>  $\approx$ 10<sup>61</sup>) ×  $M_{bm}$  就连成一体成为 宇宙(M<sub>n</sub>)的原初"宇宙包"了。

于是,
$$(2^{67.5}) \approx (10^{20.3})$$
,令  $n_{o2} = 10^{20.3}$  (7c) 现在以同样的方式求  $N_{m3}$  ,

$$\begin{array}{cccc} N_{m3} \; R_{bm}^{\;\;3} = \; (3R_{bm})^3, & \therefore \;\; N_{m3} = 27 \\ N_{bu} \;\; = 8.8 \times 10^{60} \approx \! 10^{61} \! = (27^{42.6}), \;\; \overline{\text{mi}} \;\; (3^{42.6}) \approx \\ (10^{20.3}), \;\; \diamondsuit \;\; n_{o3} = 10^{20.3}, \end{array} \label{eq:normalization}$$

$$\therefore \quad \mathbf{n_0} = \mathbf{n_{02}} = \mathbf{n_{03}} \approx (10^{20.3}) \tag{7e}$$

分析:正常合并膨涨: 10<sup>61</sup> 个 M<sub>bm</sub>正常合并膨胀 在一起所须时间,由(7c)和(7e)可知,不管 tbm 以几 倍的时间延长,连接整个 M<sub>n</sub> 所需的时间是一样的, 即 t<sub>e</sub>=10<sup>20.3</sup> 倍。

**原初暴涨**: 但从(7a)和(7d)看, 由于大量最小黑 洞的合并,其实就是黑洞碰撞产生的'宇宙大爆 10-23·s 是与 NASA/WMAP 所观察到的'暴涨时间' 炸',这必然会产生整个宇宙包"空间暴涨",这种 大致相同的。 '空间膨胀——暴涨'就是宇宙的"原初暴涨", 从(7a) 看,当  $M_{bm}$ 连接其它的 8 个  $M_{bm}$ 时,其  $R_{bm}$ 会增长 8 7-4\*。现在验算作者"原初暴涨"新机理的计算的结果 倍, 即  $8 = 2^3$  倍。同样在 (7d),  $R_{bm}$  也会增长  $27 = 3^3$ . 与其他学者的计算数据作比较。 这就是说, thunc 延长到 2 thun时, 其所连接的 Mhun 数就 不是  $2^3$ , 而是  $(2^3)^3 = 2^9$ . <u>说明'原初爆炸'就是将来不</u> 及膨胀的诸多最小黑洞抱在一起同时爆炸大膨胀。同 样, 当时间 t<sub>hm</sub> 延长到 3t<sub>hm</sub>, 其所连接的 M<sub>hm</sub>的数目就 应是 39. 下面再用同样的方式求一般规律的 no.

$$\Leftrightarrow N_{mn} = n_o^9, \ \pi n_o = 10^x$$
 (7f)

$$(19)$$
  $N_{\text{bu}} \approx 10^{61}$ ,  $\therefore 10^{61} = 10^{9x}$  (7g)

$$x_1 = 61/9 = 6.8, : \underline{n}_{o1} = (10^{6.8})$$
 (7-1a)

(7-1a) 是 "暴涨"情况下  $t_{bm}$  延长的倍数  $n_{o1}$ 。 现在按照从(7e)式的原理,得出一个在没有"暴涨" 情况下的  $x_2$  和  $n_{o2}$ ,可称为"<u>正常合并膨涨"</u>。

$$x_2 = 61/3 = 20.3$$
  $n_{02} = 10^{20.3}$  (7-1b)

$$\therefore \mathbf{n}_{02} = \mathbf{n}_{01}^{3}$$
或者  $\mathbf{n}_{02} = 10^{13} \mathbf{n}_{01}$  (7-1c)

7-2\*。公式(7-1a) 和 (7-1b)证明了将所有 M, 连成一 体而组成整个"宇宙包"的可能有2种方式;但不管 以何种方式,将所有 M<sub>bm</sub>连成一体为 M<sub>u</sub>所需的时间 都是仅仅由 M,, 的值所确定的。

[A]. 原初暴涨: 
$$\mathbf{t}_{o1} = \mathbf{t}_{bm} \times \mathbf{n}_{o1} = \underline{5.37 \times 10^{-44} \times 10^{6.8}} = 0.2 \times 10^{-36} \mathbf{s} = \mathbf{2} \times \mathbf{10}^{-37} \mathbf{s} = \mathbf{10}^{-36.5} \mathbf{s}$$
。 (7-2a)

[B]. 正常合并膨涨: 
$$\mathbf{t}_{o2} = \mathbf{t}_{bm} \times \mathbf{n}_{o2} = 5.37 \times 10^{-44} \times 10^{20.3} = 2 \times 10^{-24} \mathbf{s} = 10^{-23} \mathbf{s}$$
 (7-2b)  $\mathbf{t}_{o2}/\mathbf{t}_{o1} = \mathbf{n}_{o2}/\mathbf{n}_{o1} = 2 \times 10^{-24}/2 \times 10^{-37} = 10^{13}$  (7-2c)

7-3\*. 从 (7-1a) 和 (7-1b) 到 (7-2a) 和 (7-2b), 似乎可以 推测出有2种'膨涨'的方式。

[A]。第一种是"原初暴涨", 即符合 (7-1a) 和 (7-2a) 的规律, 其膨胀的时间从宇宙出生时的 5.37×10- $^{44}$ s 到  $t_{01} = 10^{-36.5}$ s,但其膨胀的结果仍然达到了与  $(t_{02})$ = 10<sup>-23</sup>s) 时的'正常合并膨胀'的结果一致, 2 种不同

时间  $t_{01} = 10^{-36.5}$ s 和  $t_{02} = 10^{-23}$ s 都达到了相等(一 致)的视界半径 R<sub>b</sub>,即将整个 M<sub>a</sub>都连成一体,只 不过是其终结的时间不同而已。因此, '原初暴涨' 后在时间段从  $t_{01} = 10^{-36.5}$ s 到  $t_{02} = 10^{-23.5}$ s, 宇宙黑洞 似乎在踹一口气,成为自由膨胀.

[B]。第二种是'正常合并膨胀',它符合 (7-1b) 和 (7-2b)的规律, 其时间是从  $5.37\times10^{-44}$ s 连续到  $t_{o2}$  $=10^{-23}$ ·s,其膨胀结束时的  $R_b$ 与 A 种是相同的。 但 二者结束的时间点是不相同的。  $A \ge t_{ol} = 10^{-1}$  $^{36.5}$ s,B是  $t_{02} = 10^{-23}$ s.

[C]. 从  $t_{o2} = 10^{-23}$ ·s 直到现在, 我们宇宙黑洞的膨 **胀就成为合乎哈勃定律的正常膨胀,**是由宇宙中小黑 洞不断地合并长大所产生的。

结论: 宇宙暴涨的结束时间  $t_{01} = 10^{-36.5}$ s 和  $t_{02} =$ 

按照苏宜《新天文学概论》中 12.7 节中的资料 和计算,[2] 他写道,在宇宙 thm 为从宇宙创生起的宇宙 年龄,到在 t=10<sup>-36</sup>s 时(该书并未指出这就是暴涨 的终结时间,可能也不知道何时终结),宇宙经过 "暴涨"的尺寸为  $R_{36} = 3.8$  cm, 根据他的说法, 宇宙 尺寸 R 暴涨为,

$$R_{-36}/R_{-44} = 3.8/10^{-13} = 3.8 \times 10^{13} \, ^{[2]}$$
 (7-4d)  
他说宇宙体积暴涨了(3.8×10<sup>13</sup>)<sup>3</sup> = 10<sup>40</sup> 倍。 [2]

下面是作者的计算结果,可与苏宜教授上面的 数据作比较。

已知: 宇宙诞生时  $\underline{M}_{bm}=10^{-5}$ g, 其  $R_{bm}=1.61$ ×  $10^{-33}$ cm,其 $\rho_{bm}$ = $10^{93}$ g/cm $^3$ ,宇宙总质-能 $M_u$ = $10^{56}$ g, 先求宇宙在诞生时宇宙 M,, 的尺寸 R44.

 $R_{44}^{3} = 3M_u/4\pi\rho_{bm}$ 

$$\therefore R_{44} = 2.8 \times 10^{-13} \text{cm}$$
 (7-4e)

前节已经证明,宇宙经过'原初暴涨'时间  $10^{6.8}$  倍,在达到  $t_{ol} = 10^{-36.5}$ s 后,就将所有的  $M_{bm}$ (=M<sub>n</sub>) 连接在一起,而与'**正常合并膨涨**'经过 t<sub>e</sub>  $=10^{20.3}$  倍 到达  $t_{0.2}=10^{-23}$ s 时的结果是相同的,就是 说,整个宇宙 M<sub>n</sub>都由同样大小黑洞 M<sub>bo</sub>组成。

现在求'原初暴涨'到  $t_{ol}=10^{-36.5}$ s 后的  $M_{bo}$ 。由 于最小黑洞  $M_{bm}$ 的  $R_{bm}$ 和  $t_{bm}$ 暴涨的倍数  $t_e=10^{20.3}$  是 相同的。所以,Mbo的 Rbo是,

$$R_{bo} = t_e R_{bm} = 10^{20.3} \times 1.61 \times 10^{-33} = 3.2 \times 10^{-13} cm$$

 $M_{bo} = C^2 R_{bo} / 2G = 2 \times 10^{15} g$ 

 $M_{bo} = 2 \times 10^{15}$ g 就是宇宙原初小黑洞。

 $\rho_{bo} = 3M_{bo}/4\pi R_{bo}^3 = 1.46 \times 10^{52} \text{ g/cm}^3$ 

此时, $\rho_{bo}$ 也即是宇宙'原初暴涨'到 $t_{ol} = 10^{-}$  $^{36.5}$ s 后宇宙的密度。而此时宇宙的  $R_{ub}$  ( $R_{-36.5}$ ) 是:

$$R_{ub}^{3} = 3M_{u}/4\pi\rho_{bo}$$

$$\therefore R_{ub} = 12cm \tag{7-4f}$$

 $R_{ub}/R_{44}=R_{.36.5}/R_{.44}=12/2.8\times10^{-13}=4.3\times10^{13}$  (7-4g) 其近似的,这表明作者提出的对我们宇宙诞生时所发 生的'宇宙原初暴涨'的新观点、公式、证明和结果 都是正确的, 与先前学者们的计算也是吻合的。

可见,<u>宇宙从诞生无数的 M<sub>bm</sub> = 1,05</u>×10<sup>-5</sup>g 起,将  $M_{\rm n} = 10^{61} M_{\rm hm} 在 5.37 \times 10^{-44} {\rm s} \ 10^{-36.5} {\rm s} \ {\rm hh}$ 间间隔内以'空间暴涨'的爆炸形式连接成一体,这 就是宇宙的'原初暴涨'。

# 【8】。从宇宙 7 种大小不同的典型黑洞 M<sub>b</sub>的演变 分析各种宇宙黑洞的参数的变化规律。

从前面可知,一旦新的最小黑洞 Mbl =2Mbm 在普 朗克领域生成之后,它们在极高密度为 10<sup>92</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> 的 宇宙包里是互相紧贴着的。它们最初的合并造成了宇 宙的'原初暴涨'。它们只有合并和吞噬外界的能量 -物质才能降低内部的压力和温度。暴涨后,最小黑 洞逐步成长为 2×10<sup>15</sup> g 的#2 微型黑洞,即宇宙原初小 黑洞。但这许多的微型黑洞仍然是在高密度约  $\underline{I_m}$  是黑洞  $\underline{M_b}$  的总信息量, $\underline{I_m}$  =  $4GM_b^2/C$  (63d) = $n_iI_o$ . 10<sup>53</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>下紧贴在一起,他们的继续合并造成宇宙的 继续膨胀,即从下面表二中从#1 最小黑洞经过⇒ #2 **宝库,并将黑洞理论和宇宙学紧密地联系在一起。**  $\Rightarrow$ #3  $\Rightarrow$ #4  $\Rightarrow$  #5  $\Rightarrow$  #6  $\Rightarrow$  #7 我们宇宙大黑洞。

表二中列出了宇宙在膨胀过程中7种典型黑洞的 **结论:** 比<u>较(7-4d)与(7-4g) 2 式,它们数值是极</u>参数值。其中的 $M_b$ 、 $R_b$ 、 $T_b$ 、 $\tau_b$ (黑洞寿命)、  $ρ_b$  、 $m_{ss}$  等可从第一篇中的(1a)、(1b)、 (1c)、(1d)、(4c)、(5a)得到。

下面再定出表二中的其它参数的来源公式,

$$n_i = M_b / m_{ss} \tag{8a}$$

 $m_{ss}$ 的波长 $\lambda_{ss} = Ch/(2\pi m_{ss}C^2)$ ,

由于 $m_{ss}C^2 \times 2t_s = h/2\pi = I_o$ ,所以,

$$\underline{\lambda}_{ss} = 2Ct_s = 2R_b$$
,而频率 $\underline{\nu}_{ss} = C/\underline{\lambda}_{ss}$  (8b)

$$t_{s} = R_{b}/C \tag{8c}$$

$$E_r = m_{ss}C^2 \tag{8d}$$

由于 $\tau_b = 10^{-27} M_b^3$ ,所以- $d\tau_b = 3 \times 10^{-27} M_b^2 dM_b$ 。  $<u> 如果使dM_b = 1$ 个m</u><sub>ss</sub>,则 $-dτ_b$ 就是黑洞发射2个邻近 mss之间所需的间隔时间。因此,

--dτ<sub>b</sub> ≈ 
$$3 \times 10^{-27} M_b^2 dM_b = 3 \times 10^{-27} M_b \times M_b m_{ss}$$
 ≈ 0.  $356 \times 10^{-36} M_b$  (8e)

 $I_0$  是  $m_{ss}$  的信息量,即最小信息量。所有  $m_{ss}$  的 信息量都等于  $I_0 = h/2\pi$ , 而与  $M_b$  和  $m_{ss}$  的大小无关。

表二中的数据是研究黑洞和宇宙起源演变资料的

表二: 7种不同类型黑洞其在视界半径 Rb上的性能参数值的计算结果[4]

(下面是表二中黑洞序号和名称: #1 最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub>; #2 微型黑洞 M<sub>bo</sub>, 也叫原初宇宙小黑洞; 型黑洞; #4 月亮质量黑洞; #5 恒星级黑洞; #6 巨型黑洞; #7 我们宇宙黑洞; )

黑洞	#1 <u>最小</u> 	#2 微型	#3 中型	#4 <u>_月亮型</u>	#5 恒星级	#6 巨型	#7 宇宙
$M_b(g)$ ,	10 <sup>-5</sup> g	10 <sup>15</sup> g	$2 \times 10^{18} g$ $3 \times 10^{-10}$	$10^{26}\mathrm{g}$	$6\times10^{33}(3\mathrm{M}_{\mathrm{\theta}})$	$10^{42} g (10^9 M_{\theta})$	10 <sup>56</sup> g
$R_b$ (cm),	$1.5 \times 10^{-33}$ ,	$1.5 \times 10^{-13}$		1. 5× 10 <sup>-2</sup>	9×10 <sup>5</sup>	$1.5 \times 10^{14}$	$1.5 \times 10^{28}$
$T_b(k)$	$0.8 \times 10^{32}$ ,	$0.8 \times 10^{12}$	$0.4 \times 10^{9}$	8	1.3×10 <sup>-7</sup>	$7 \times 10^{-16}$	7×10 <sup>-30</sup>
$\tau_b$ (s,yrs)	), 10 <sup>-42</sup> s	10 <sup>10</sup> yrs	8×10 <sup>27</sup>	10 <sup>44</sup> yrs	$10^{66} yrs$	10 <sup>92</sup> yrs	$10^{134} yrs$
$\rho_b(g/cm^3)$	), $7 \times 10^{92}$	$7 \times 10^{52}$	$2 \times 10^{46}$	$7 \times 10^{30}$	$1.5 \times 10^{15}$	$7 \times 10^{-2}$	$7 \times 10^{-30}$
$\underline{m}_{ss}(g)$ ,	105	10 <sup>24</sup>	10 <sup>27</sup>	10 <sup>36</sup>	1.6×10 <sup>44</sup>	10 <sup>52</sup>	10 <sup>66</sup>
ni,	1	$10^{39}$	$4 \times 10^{46}$	$10^{62}$	$4 \times 10^{77}$	$10^{94}$	$10^{122}$
$\lambda_{ss}(cm)$ ,	$3 \times 10^{-33}$	$3 \times 10^{-13}$	$6 \times 10^{-10}$	$3 \times 10^{-2}$	$1.8 \times 10^{6}$	$3 \times 10^{14}$	$3 \times 10^{28}$
$d\tau_{b}(s)$ ,	$3\times10^{-42}$ s,	3×10 <sup>21</sup>	$10^{-18}$	3×10 <sup>11</sup>	$1.7 \times 10^{-3}$	$3\times10^5$	10 <sup>12</sup> yrs
${\bf v}_{\rm ss} ({\bf s}^{-1}),$	$10^{43}$	$10^{23}$	$0.5 \times 10^{20}$	10 <sup>12</sup>	$0.17 \times 10^{5}$	10 <sup>-4</sup>	$10^{-18}$
$t_{s}(s)$ ,	$0.5 \times 10^{-43}$	$0.5 \times 10^{-23}$	$10^{-20}$	$0.5 \times 10^{-12}$	3×10 <sup>5</sup>	$0.5 \times 10^4$	$0.5 \times 10^{18}$
$E_{r}(erg)$ ,	$10^{16}$	10 <sup>-3</sup>	10 <sup>-7</sup>	$10^{-15}$	$10^{-23}$	10 <sup>-31</sup>	$0.6 \times 10^{18}$
$\underline{I}_{m}$ $(\underline{I}_{o})$ ,	<u>I</u> o	$10^{39} I_{o}$	$4 \times 10^{46} I_{o}$	$10^{62} I_{o}$	$4 \times 10^{77} I_{o}$	$10^{94\ 94}  \mathrm{I_o}$	$10^{122} I_{o}$

#### § 1。我们宇宙的生长衰亡规律和过程

宇宙黑洞从诞生到现今的膨胀过程和演变历史。宇宙宇宙黑洞就会继续按哈勃定律膨胀,在合并其它黑洞 在连续膨胀过程中,黑洞由小变大,列举上面7种黑 和吞噬完所有能量-物质后,就会不停地发射霍金辐 洞,各有其代表意义。我们宇宙在 137 亿年以前诞生 射而不停地收缩,直到最后收缩成为  $\mathbf{M}_{bm} \approx 10^{-5}\mathrm{g}$  最 于无数宇宙最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub>≈10<sup>5</sup>g 及其后的碰撞与合 小黑洞而消亡。但宇宙的寿命就会大大的增加, 并,膨胀而成为现今  $M_n=10^{56}$ g 的宇宙大黑洞。如果 而>> $10^{134}$  年。**这就是我们宇宙黑洞的生死轮回,它** 现今宇宙黑洞外面已无能量-物质可被吞噬,宇宙黑 符合宇宙中任何事物都有生长衰亡的普遍规律。 洞就会一直发射霍金辐射, 再经过约 10134 年以后, 将收缩成为  $M_{hm}$  ≈  $10^{-5}$ g 的最小黑洞消亡在普郎克领 **和今后的宇宙中。** 

域。如果宇宙黑洞外尚有能量-物质可供吞噬,或者 表二中黑洞质-能量 M<sub>b</sub>从 10<sup>-5</sup>g ~ 10<sup>56</sup>g 就是我们 未来会与另外的宇宙大黑洞碰撞和合并。那么,我们

§ 2。#1~#6 的 6 种原生小黑洞都不可能存在于过去

间, ρ<sub>bo</sub>为其相对应的宇宙密度。

$$\mathbf{t_{up}} = (3/8\pi \,\rho_{bo}\mathbf{G})^{1/2} \tag{8a}$$

降到  $ρ_{bo} \approx 10^{-20} \text{g/cm}^3$ , 而#6 黑洞的密度  $ρ_{bo} > 10^{-1}$  统中, 也有一些恒星级黑洞孤独地在宇宙空间漂浮。 射图显示, 宇宙内部的能量-物质密度是相当均匀 膨胀,不可能单个地收缩而保存下来。#5、#6 号黑 洞是宇宙膨胀到物质统治时代后,由于辐射与物质的 分离,<u>辐射温度的降低比粒子温度的降低快得多</u>,大 § 8; #6 巨型黑洞  $M_b \approx (10^7 \sim 10^{12}) \ M_{\odot}$ : 此巨型黑洞 量的物质粒子才会收缩成为后生的#5、#6 黑洞。

不管是原生黑洞,还是后生黑洞,只要其 M,相 同,其它的一切特性和参数值 R<sub>b</sub>,T<sub>b</sub>, m<sub>ss</sub> 都完全相 同,其膨胀和收缩规律和命运也相同。

生我们宇宙的细胞--原生最小黑洞。 $N_{bu}\approx 10^{61}$  个  $M_{bm}$  微弱的霍金辐射。其寿命将大到  $10^{76\sim 101}$  年。 $^{[3]}$ 的不断地合并与碰撞形成了我们宇宙的'原初暴 涨',他们继续地合并又造成了宇宙黑洞的膨胀。它 § 9; #7 <u>我们宇宙巨无霸黑洞</u>  $M_{bu} \approx 10^{56} g$ : 上面已完 中寿命最短的粒子,寿命10-43秒。

 $10^{15}$ g, 它发射的霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ 相当于质子质量。它的 我们看不见宇宙外面还有多少能量-物质可被吞噬。 总质能量有  $M_b \approx 10^{39}$  个质子,只有一个原子核的大 我们宇宙黑洞现在发射的霍金辐射粒子  $m_{ss} \approx 10^{-66} g$ , 宙的年龄相当。霍金在 1970 年代曾预言它们可能存 宙现在的年龄 137 亿年还长呢。 在于宇宙空间,因为当时的宇宙密度ρ<sub>u</sub>= M<sub>bo</sub>的密度  $\rho_{bo}=10^{15} \mathrm{g/cm^3}$ ,在如此高密度下,所有的  $M_{bo}$  只能 § 10; 不同大小质量黑洞  $M_b$  的霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$  有不同 紧贴在一起合并膨胀,它们不可能残存至今。

§ 5。#3 中型黑洞.  $M_b \approx 10^{19} g$ : 其霍金辐射粒子  $m_{ss}$  克领域,爆炸产生最高能量的 γ-射线。 的质能 m<sub>e</sub>≈10<sup>-27</sup>g≈电子质量。

§ 6。#4 月亮质量黑洞  $M_b \approx 10^{26} g$ ; 它们在其视界半 洞  $10^{-5} g$ 。它们是高能量的 γ-射线。 径  $R_b$ 上的温度  $T_b \approx 2.7$  k, 即宇宙的微波背景辐射的 的  $M_b < 10^{26} g$  黑洞, 其温度  $T_b > 2.7 k$ , 它就无法吞噬 宇宙中的能量,只能向宇宙空间发射相当于  $\mathbf{m}_{ss} > 10^{-36}$ g 能量的辐射,而不停地收缩其体积,直到最后收缩  $6 \times 10^{33} g$  之间的黑洞,它们所发射的霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ 的波 成为 M<sub>bm</sub> ≈ 10<sup>--5</sup>g 最小黑洞在普郎克领域产生最强烈 的 $\gamma$ -射线暴而消亡。如果这个孤立的  $M_b > 10^{26} g$ , 其 温度 T<sub>b</sub> < 2.7 k, 它就会吞噬完其周围的能量后, 再 黑洞在普郎克领域产生强烈的γ-射线暴而消亡。

§ 7。#5 恒星级黑洞  $M_b \approx 6 \times 10^{33} g(3 M_0)$ ; 这类黑洞是 §  $\overline{11}$ 。将#1 最小黑洞  $\underline{M}_{bm} = 10^{-5} g$  与#7 我们宇宙大 后生的、它们是确实存在于宇宙空间的实体。由于新 黑洞 M<sub>bu</sub>≈10<sup>56</sup>g 的各种参数值比较如下:

在下面的哈勃定律公式中,tup是宇宙特征膨胀时 星或超新星的爆炸后,其中心的残骸在巨大的内压力 下塌缩而成。也有可能由于双星系统中的中子星在吸 收其伴星的能量-物质后, 当质量超过 3Ma 的奥本海 在 tup约为宇宙宇宙诞生后 tup ≈ 40 万年时,宇宙 默-沃尔可夫极限时就会塌缩成一个恒星级黑洞。由 刚结束辐射时代 Radiation Era, 此时宇宙密度已经下 于宇宙中多双星系统, 此类黑洞大多数隐藏于双星系 g/cm³。可见,在辐射时代结束之前,从宇宙背景辐 由于其温度 T<sub>b</sub>≈10<sup>-7</sup>k,即 T<sub>b</sub><<2.7k,所以它只会吸收 其伴星和其周围的能量-物质而继续增长其质量。它 的,物质和能量是可以相互转化的。这些原初黑洞只的寿命一般大于 10<sup>66</sup>年,而所发射的霍金**辐射的能量** 能与紧贴在一起的其它黑洞合并而随着宇宙的膨胀而 非常微弱,相当于  $m_{ss} \approx 10^{-44} g$ 。实际上,尚无真实 直接的观测证据显示恒星级黑洞是如何形成的。

存在于星系团和星系的中心, 在宇宙进入物质为主的 时代后的早期形成。巨型黑洞内还可能存在有恒星级 黑洞。类星体是其中的一些巨型黑洞的少年时期。由 于它们都处在星系团的中心,其外围尚可能有许多能 量-物质可供吞噬,因此,它们还在继续长大。直到 § 3。#1 最小黑洞  $M_{bl} = 2(M_{bm} = 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g)$ ; 是产 吞噬完外围所有的能量-物质后,才会极慢地发射极

们是宇宙中有最高能量密度和温度的粒子,也是宇宙 全证实我们现在的宇宙就是一个宇宙大黑洞。哈勃定 律所反映的宇宙膨胀规律就是我们宇宙黑洞吞噬外界 能量-物质所造成的膨胀规律。我们宇宙黑洞现在还 § 4。#2 微型黑洞称之为'原初宇宙小黑洞' $M_{bo} \approx$  在膨胀,这表明宇宙外面还有能量-物质可供吞噬。 小。 $10^{39}$  是狄拉克大数假说中的大数。它的寿命与字 约隔  $10^{12}$ 年才发出另外一个  $\mathbf{m}_{ss}$ 。而  $10^{12}$ 年比我们字

# 的本质和特性。

第一: 孤立的#1 最小黑洞只能爆炸解体在普朗

第二; #1 最小黑洞 ~ #2 微型黑洞  $10^{15}$ g : 它们 的霍金辐射 m<sub>ss</sub> ≥质子质量 p<sub>m</sub> =1.66×10<sup>-24</sup>g ≤最小黑

第三; 在#2 微型黑洞 10<sup>15</sup>g ~ #3 中型黑洞 温度 2.7k。从理论上说,如果在宇宙空间有一个孤立  $2\times10^{18}$ g 之间的黑洞,它们所发射的霍金辐射  $m_{ss}$ 的质 量是介乎质子质量  $p_m \sim$  电子质量  $e_m$ 的  $\gamma$ -射线。

> 第四; 在#3 中型黑洞 2×10<sup>18</sup>g~#5 恒星级黑洞 长是介乎x射线~最长的无线电波的辐射能。

第五; #5恒星级黑洞6×10<sup>33</sup>g~#7我们宇宙大黑洞 之间的黑洞,它们所发射的霍金辐射m。。是 10<sup>-44</sup>g 发射霍金辐射而收缩,最后收缩成为  $M_{bm} \approx 10^{-5} g$  最小  $\sim 10^{-66} g$ , 根据它们的波长判断应该是目前尚无法观测 的引力波。

质量比值:  $M_{b7}/M_{b1} = 10^{56}/10^{-5} = 10^{61}$ ; 10<sup>-61</sup>

寿命比值;  $\tau_{b7}/\tau_{b7} = 10^{142}/10^{-42} = 10^{184}$ ;  $m_{ss}$ 的比值:  $m_{ss1}/m_{ss7} = 10^{-5}/10^{-66} = 10^{61}$  $m_{ss}$ 的数目-ni 比值; $ni_7/-ni1 = 10^{122}/1 = 10^{122}$ 信息量  $I_m$ 的比值;  $I_{m7}/I_{m1} = 10^{122}/1 = 10^{122}$ 

--dτ<sub>b</sub> 是每发生一个  $m_{ss}$  的间隔时间的比值 =  $d\tau_{b7}/-d\tau_{b1}$  =3×10<sup>19</sup>/3×10<sup>-42</sup> = 10<sup>61</sup>

黑洞平均密度比 $\rho_b(g/cm^3)$ ;  $7\times10^{92}$  / $7\times10^{-30}$  =  $10^{122}$ 

从上面的比值来看,#7 黑洞与#1 各种性能参数 的比值,凡与黑洞质量 Mb 成正比或成反比的参数, 其比值均为 10<sup>61</sup> (与组成宇宙 Mbu 的最小黑洞的数目 相同): 凡与黑洞质量  $M_b^2$  成比例的参数, 其比值均 为 10<sup>122</sup>; 黑洞寿命与 M<sub>b</sub><sup>3</sup> 成比例, 所以其比值为 10183。这些准确的比例数值证明了本文新黑洞理论和 所有公式的正确性和圆满的自治性, 也证明了黑洞各 参数之间的准确的、简单的、单值的关系。

的总质-能量值 M, 确定了, 其它的所有性能参数也 视界半径比值;  $R_{b7}/R_{b1}=1.5\times10^{28}/1.5\times10^{-33}=10^{61}$ , 就准确而单值地随着被确定了。同时,也证明了广义 **史瓦西时间比值**;  $t_{s7}/t_{s1} = 0.5 \times 10^{18}/0.5 \times 10^{43} = 10^{61}$ ; 相对论中存在无准确数值的、无限大密度的'奇点' **视界半径温度比值**:  $T_{b7}/T_{b1}=7\times10^{-30}/0.8\times10^{32}=$  的荒谬性。所以。相同的  $M_b$  的黑洞性能,就是其视 界半径上的性能参数是完全相同的。但是,各黑洞内 部的物质结构、运动状态、物质能量密度的分布是可 以大不相同的,黑洞愈大,其内部的差别愈大。#6 巨型黑洞里甚至可能存在有#5恒星级黑洞。

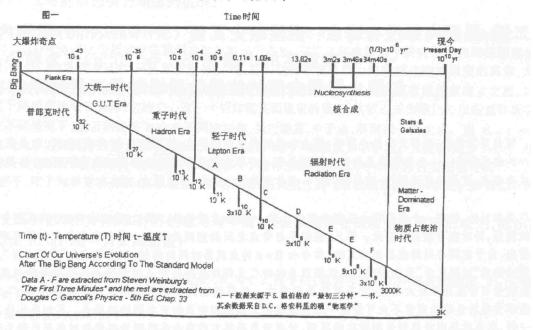
> § 12。根据史瓦西黑洞的的本性公式(1c), Rb= 2GM<sub>u</sub>/C²,和 M<sub>u</sub> = 4πρ<sub>u</sub> R<sub>u</sub>³/3,可以得出,宇宙膨胀 到任何时候某一个确定的时刻 t,,,就有一个确定的  $M_{\bullet}$  黑洞,相应的宇宙的实际密度 $o_{\bullet}$  和视界半径  $R_{\bullet}$  就 确定了。所以 $\rho_{u}R_{u}^{2}=常数$ 。

 $\rho_{u} = \rho_{b1} (R_{b1}/R_{b7})^{2} = 10^{92} (10^{-61})^{2} = 10^{-30} \text{g/cm}^{3}$ 

这就是宇宙当今的实际密度ρ<sub>11</sub>=10<sup>-30</sup>g/cm 可直接 推算出来,并完全与现代的观测相符合,这证明我们 宇宙的膨胀就是宇宙黑洞吞噬外界质能和原始大量最 **小黑洞M<sub>bm</sub>合并所产生的膨胀。**这也就**完全**否定了弗 里德曼根据解广义相对论方程所得出的由宇宙平直性 决定宇宙是开放还是闭合的模型是一个假模型。

#### 【9】。用黑洞理论的新公式进一步验证大爆炸宇宙标准模型的演变和宇宙黑洞演变的一致性我们宇宙的演 图一, 宇宙演变的标准模型中温度 T 与时间 t 的[10] 化规律与公式:

9. 附录 A: 图一,宇宙演变的标准模型中温度 T与时间 t的关系;



附录 A 宇宙演变的标准模型中温度 T与时间 t 的关系

§ 1. 宇宙的演化规律可用两种不同的简单方式,即下 据粒子物理学、热力学、量子力学和近代天文观测的 面的公式(1a)(1b)和图一来大致正确地描述。这是根 成就而得出的结果. 通称之为宇宙大爆炸标准模型。

首先, 图一详细地标列出了宇宙在各个不同时期 的演化过程中时间 t 与温度 T 的相互对应关系, 其各 子的参数, 种数据简明,大致正确而不够精确,是有误差的.<10>

其次,下面的公式(1a)从量上定出了宇宙从辐射 化规律: (从 $t = \pm 10^{-43}$ 秒到 $t = 1/3 \times 10^6$ 年)

$$Tt^{1/2} = k_1$$
,  $R = k_2 t$ , [ $^{[\pm]}$ ]  $R^{1/2}T = k_3$ ,  $R = k_4 \lambda$ ,  $^{<2>}$  (1a)

t--宇宙的特征膨胀时间, R--宇宙的特征尺度或 大小,  $\lambda$ —辐射的波长, T—宇宙辐射温度,  $k_1,k_2,k_3,k_4$ — 常数. 下面的(1b) 式定出了宇宙在物质占统治地位时 代各物理状态参数之间的变化规律和相互关系(t 合。再验算  $R_{bm}/t_s = R_u/t_u$ , =1/3×10<sup>6</sup>年到现今)

$$Tt^{2/3} = k_6$$
,  $R = k_7 t^{2/3}$ ,  $RT = k_8$ ,  $R = k_9 \lambda$ , (1b)

T, t, R, λ一同上, k<sub>6</sub>,k<sub>7</sub>,k<sub>8</sub>,k<sub>9</sub>,一常数。(1a)和 (1b) 也很难准确地定出其各常数。

上式  $Tt^{1/2} = k_1$ 和  $Tt^{2/3} = k_6$ .可参考 S. Weinberg 的 "最初三分钟"之附录. 如果将图一中的数值与按照 (1a)(1b)式中计算出来的数据相比较, 其结果大致相 同。这就是建立在近代粒子物理基础上的标准宇宙模 型的演变数据. 而且这些数据也与近代的天文观测数 据 MBR (微波背景辐射) 相吻合. 我们如果给出一组 宇宙演化的初始值或特定值,就可以取代(1a)(1b)中 的各个常数 k<sub>1</sub>······k<sub>9</sub>, 从而可以计算出对应于宇宙演 化各个时间 t 和相对应的的其它各参数如 T, R, …。作 为例子, 我们用(1b)验证宇宙在物质占统治时代的各 个物理参数的变化, 计算结果如下:

 $R_1/R_2 = (t_1/t_2)^{2/3}, R_1T_1 = R_2T_2, T_1/T_2 = (t_2/t_1)^{2/3}$  $R_1/R_2 = \lambda_1/\lambda_2$ 

如取  $t_1 = 13 \times 10^{9} \text{yrs}$ ,  $t_2 = 4 \times 10^{5} \text{yrs}$ , 则  $t_1/t_2 \approx$  其温度  $T_{uss}$ 。于是, 32,500,  $(t_1/t_2)^{2/3} \approx 1,000$ .

取  $R_1=12\times10^{27}$  cm, 则  $R_2=R_1/1,000=12\times10^{24}$  cm; 取  $T_1=3K$ , 则  $T_2=3,000K$ ; 取 $\lambda_1=0.1$ cm, 则  $\lambda_2=10^{-4}$ cm。

以上各参数的初始值可见于图一, 算出结果与近 代观测数值相吻合。以上数值表明宇宙从物质占统治 时代的最初时刻膨胀至今, 时间膨胀了约 32,500 倍, 尺寸扩大了约 1,000 倍,温度则降低约 1,000 倍,辐 射波长增长约 1,000 倍,符合 MBR(微波背景辐射)的 量的粒子是不可能逃出到黑洞的外部的。 观测数据。

### § 2; 用黑洞理论和公式验证宇宙膨胀图一在辐射时 期的数据。举例如下:

1\*; 在图一中的'重子时代'取相应的一对数据 t--T, 例如, 取  $t_u = 10^{-6}$ s;  $T_u = 10^{13}$ k;

由哈勃定律,
$$\rho = 3H^2/8\pi G = 3/(8\pi Gt^2)(9a)$$

$$\rho_{\rm u} t_{\rm u}^2 = 3/(8\pi G) = 1.79 \times 10^6 \tag{9b}$$

由  $t_u = 10^{-6}$ s, 得  $\rho_u = 1.79 \times 10^{18}$ g/cm<sup>3</sup>,

由于  $R_u = Ct_u$ ,  $\therefore R_u = 3 \times 10^4 \text{cm}$ , (9c)

其相对应的黑洞 Mu 的质量是。

 $M_{\rm u} = 4\pi\rho_{\rm u} R_{\rm u}^3/3 = 2.023 \times 10^{32} {\rm g}$ (9d)2\*;根据(1a)式Tt1/2=k1求出Tu,

从第一篇【1】节中最小黑洞  $M_{bm} = m_{p}$  普朗克粒

 $R_{bm} \equiv L_p = 1.61 \times 10^{-33} \text{cm}; T_{bm} \equiv T_p = 0.71 \times 10^{32} \text{k};$ 最小黑洞 M<sub>bm</sub>的康普顿时间 Compton time t<sub>c</sub>=史瓦西 时代末期到大爆炸的过程中各个物理状态参数间的变 时间  $t_s$ ,  $t_c = t_s = R_{hm}/C = 1.61 \times 10^{-33}/3 \times 10^{10} = 0.537$  $\times 10^{-43}$ s

 $T_{n} (t / t_{n})^{1/2} = T_{n};$ 

 $T_{11} = 0.71 \times 10^{32} (0.537 \times 10^{-43}/10^{-6})^{1/2} = 1.65 \times 10^{13} \text{k};$ 可见, T<sub>u</sub>=1.65×10<sup>13</sup>k 与上面表中列出的 T<sub>u</sub>= 10<sup>13</sup>k 几乎全相同。表明黑洞公式与图一的数值吻

 $\therefore 1.61 \times 10^{-33} / 0.537 \times 10^{-43} = 3 \times 10^4 / 10^{-6}$ 

(可见, (1a)式中  $R = k_2 t^{1/2}$  是错误的。)

3\*; 验证(9c)中的  $M_u = 2.023 \times 10^{32}$ g 是一个完全 的史瓦西黑洞。

根据史瓦西黑洞公式(1c),  $GM_b/R_b = C^2/2$ . 求出,

 $R_h = 2GM_u/C^2 = 2 \times 6.67 \times 10^{-8} \times 2.023 \times 10^{32} \text{g}/9 \times 10^{20}$  $= 3 \times 10^4 \text{cm} = R_u$ . 这证实了  $M_u$ 就是一个真实的黑洞。

其实,可根据(9d),(9a)和(9c)直接推导出公式 (1c), 得出  $GM_u/R_u = C^2/2$ . 这表明, 宇宙膨胀到任何时 刻的 M<sub>u</sub>都是真实的黑洞。

验算  $R^{1/2}T = k_3$ ,

对于  $M_{\text{n}}$ :  $(3\times10^4)^{1/2}\times10^{13}$ k=1.7×10<sup>15</sup>

对于  $M_{bm}$ :  $(1.61 \times 10^{-33})^{1/2} \times 0.71 \times 10^{32} = 0.9 \times 10^{16}$ 

4\*; M, 黑洞内温度 T, 与霍金辐射 ms 在其视 界半径 Ru的温度 Tuss 是完全不同的两回事。

既然  $M_u$  是黑洞,可按照公式(1d),  $\underline{m}_{ss}M_b$  =  $hC/8\pi G = 1.187 \times 10^{-10} g^2$ , 求出 M<sub>u</sub>的霍金辐射 m<sub>uss</sub> 和

> $m_{\text{uss}} = 1.187 \times 10^{-10} / 2.023 \times 10^{32} = 0.57 \times 10^{-42} \text{g}$  (9e)  $T_{\text{uss}} = C^2 m_{\text{uss}}/\kappa = 3.7 \times 10^{-6} \text{k}$

 $T_{uss} = 3.7 \times 10^{-6} k$  与  $T_u = 10^{13} k$  是差别巨大和完全 不同的两回事。 $T_u$  是黑洞  $M_u$  内总质量-能量的平均 温度,即辐射能温度。而 Tuss 是黑洞视界半径 Ru 上 的温度,是**黑洞**  $M_u$ 在  $R_u$ 上将其质量-能量转变为霍 金辐射 muss 的温度,就是说,Mu内大于 muss 质量-能

5\*。最重要的结论:图一是根据近代科学公式计 算出来的、真实的宇宙大爆炸标准模型膨胀数据表。 表二是根据第一篇黑洞理论的许多新公式计算出来的 宇宙黑洞的膨胀的数据表。从上面一系列的计算数据 可以证实,本文黑洞理论新公式计算出来的表二和字 宙大爆炸标准模型图一的数据是基本上一致的。

结论:上面的各种计算表明,用宇宙黑洞的膨 胀计算出来的宇宙在各个演变时期的参数数值的表二 比图一中计算出来的数值大致吻合,但更准确。

[注]. 在苏宜的<天文学新概论>和温伯格的<宇宙 最初三分钟>里,(1a)式中的是  $R = k_2 t^{1/2}$ ,而不是本文 中的  $R = k_2 t$ 。作者经过验算图一中的各组 t—T 数据 后证实,R=k2t与图一、哈勃定律和作者的宇宙黑洞 的演变数据表二有较好的吻合。而  $R = k_2 t^{1/2}$  与图一中 的各组 t—T 数据却大相径庭,温伯格搞理论,大概 类星体的关系 也没有对宇宙演变的参数进行验算。可见(1a)式中 R  $= k_2 t^{1/2}$  是不正确的,应更改为  $R = k_2 t$ 。

而且,从普朗克粒子  $m_p$ 的参数来看,其  $R_{bm}/t_{sbm}$ =  $1.61 \times 10^{-33} / 0.537 \times 10^{-43} = 2.998 \times 10^{10} \text{ cm/s} = C - \%$ 速。可见,在宇宙膨胀过程中,R=Ct应该成立。

### 【10】. 对黑洞和宇宙学中的一些重大问题的解释、 分析和结论:。

1\*. '奇点'被定义为具有无穷大密度的点。广 义相对论方程中粒子是点结构、粒子没有热压力作为 对抗力、零压宇宙模型和定质量物质粒子的收缩等假 设条件必然造成解广义相对论方程时出现'奇点'。 就是这些假设使 S•霍金和 R• 彭罗斯在 50 年前证明 了我们宇宙诞生于'奇点'或'奇点'的"大爆炸" 的结论,他们用错误的假设前提解广义相对论方程证 明了黑洞里有'奇点'。本文在运用霍金的黑洞理论 公式和其它经典理论公式的基础上,进一步推导发展 出来一个新的黑洞重要公式(1d) 和(1e),  $\underline{\mathbf{m}}_{ss}$   $\underline{\mathbf{M}}_{b}$  =  $hC/8\pi G = 1.187 \times 10^{-10} g^2$ , 证明了所有黑洞最后只能收 缩成为最小黑洞  $M_{bm} = m_p$  普朗克粒子而解体,而不 可能继续塌缩为'奇点'。

同样,根据第一篇的新黑洞理论和公式,作者在 第二篇推导出公式(3c), --t  $^{3/2} \le k_1(2G\kappa)/(C^5)$ , 并精确 地计算出,我们的宇宙并不是诞生于'奇点'或'奇 点'的"大爆炸",而只能是诞生于最小黑洞  $\underline{M}_{bm}$  一光度。因此,类星体的质量 $\underline{M}_{o}$ 应该满足,  $(hC/8\pi G)^{1/2} \equiv m_n \equiv 1.09 \times 10^{-5} g$ , 即普朗克粒子  $m_n$ 。

2\*. 实际上 John & Gribbin 已在他的<Companion 尺度D应该满足, to the cosmos>一书中指出,"我们宇宙可能来源于 M<sub>bm</sub>≈ 10<sup>--5</sup>g 的粒子" < 7 > " (普朗克领域 ) 实际上是 我们宇宙诞生时的状态."<7>作者在本文中只不过用正 确的新公式和数据通过精密的计算准确地证实了 John & Gribbin 的这个猜想而已。

3\*。1998年,澳大利亚和美国的2个科学家小 组在测量遥远的 Ia 型超新星爆炸时,发现了我们宇 宙的加速膨胀现象。这种加速膨胀发生在宇宙诞生后 约 50 亿年时。现在主流的科学家们将产生加速膨胀 的原因归于宇宙中出现了有排斥力的暗能量。作者在 一文章[8]中指出,宇宙的加速膨胀可能来源于我们宇 宙在其 50 亿年时与宇宙中另外一个宇宙大黑洞的碰 撞。因为黑洞在加速吞噬外界的能量-物质时,也会 产生其视界半径的加速膨胀(扩大)现象。由宇宙加 速膨胀现象的产生,作者指出这也是多宇宙存在的体 现。宇宙存在的实况可能就是一层又一层地大黑洞里 套着一些小黑洞。每一个黑洞都是一个独立地、与外 界隔离的系统或者说视界。。

4\*。(10<sup>7</sup>~10<sup>12</sup>) M<sub>0</sub> 超级大黑洞与(Quasar)

在每个星系的中心几乎都有一个超级大黑洞,其 质量范围约为( $10^7 \sim 10^{12}$ ) $M_0$ 不等。最近 "美国斯坦 福大学的天文学研究小组在遥远的宇宙中发现了被称 为Q0906+6930的黑洞。到目前为止堪称最庞大最古 老的黑洞。其质量是太阳质量的100多亿倍,形成时 间在127亿年前,即在宇宙的大爆炸之后大约10亿 年"<sup>[12]</sup>。

设上述黑洞质量 $M_q=10^{10}M_\theta=2\times10^{43}g$ , 则其 $R_q$ = 2.96×10<sup>15</sup>cm,  $\rho_q$ =1.74×10<sup>--4</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>.

"2008-09-05 报道,天文学家首次清晰观测到银 河系中心黑洞",该黑洞的史瓦西半径R<sub>v</sub>=1609万公里, 即 $R_v = 1.6 \times 10^{12}$ cm,其质量约为 $My \approx 0.54 \times 10^7 M_{\theta}$ ,平 均密度 $\rho_v = 3 \times 10^2 \text{g/cm}^3$ 。银河系中心黑洞竟有如此高 的密度,可想该巨型黑洞形成后,内部从前必然会发 生许多次形成恒星级黑洞的极强烈的超新星爆炸, 只 不过外界看不见而已。或者由于那些强烈的爆炸,会 有物质或高能射线抛射到黑洞外面, 地球上的重型元 素是否是从银河系中心黑洞抛射出来的呢?

什么是类星体? 类星体就是遥远的最明亮的巨型 黑洞天体,是上述超级黑洞的婴儿和青少年时期。现 简单介绍何香涛教授在其 "观测宇宙学" [3]中第8章 的证明如下:

下面(10a)式中是一个典型类星体的光度Lo = 5×10<sup>46</sup>erg/s. 类星体稳定的条件是其光度小于爱丁顿

 $M_O > L_O M_\theta / 1.5 \times 10^{38} = 3.3 \times 10^8 M_\theta^{[3]}$  (10a) 另一方面,对于光变周期为1小时的类星体,其

 $D \le C\Delta t = 1.1 \times 10^{14} \text{cm},$  [3] (10b)对于如此大小的一个史瓦西黑洞, 其质量 $M_s$ ;  $M_S = RC^2/2G = 1.9 \times 10^8 M_{\odot}$ 

与我们从光度辐射角度给出的类星体质量 Mo 大 致相等。可见, $M_0 \approx M_S$ ,二者是极其接近的。

分析与推论: (A): 类星体之所以是最明亮的天 体,因为它是 $M_0 > 10^8 M_0$ 的巨型黑洞,其视界半径 Ro>1014cm, 而且其外界还有极大量的能量-物质正在 被它吞噬,所以它发出的辐射总功率才能比太阳的功 率大4×10<sup>12</sup>倍,比银河系的总辐射功率大200倍。(B); 上面新发现的Q0906+6930超级黑洞总质能M<sub>0</sub>= 10<sup>10</sup>M<sub>0</sub>,但不是类星体,因为其外部没有多少能量-物质可被吞噬,不能发太亮的光。至于在其内部中 心,是否出现过类星体或者中小型黑洞(10~106)  $M_{\theta}$ ,中心之外是否还可能有恒星级黑洞,这些在其 视界半径之内所发生的事情是我们无法看见的。另外 由于我们银河系中心的黑洞太小, 在其早期还够不上 成为一个类星体。 (C): 超级黑洞外的剩余能量-物质 愈多,则黑洞因吞噬能量-物质而向宇宙空间发射的 辐射能量也愈多。在宇宙空间也就愈亮。银河系中心 的超级黑洞因其密度高达3×10<sup>2</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>,其外围的能量-物质必然很少, 所以较暗。 先有行星状星云的星系, 然后其中心再收缩成为各种 星体各种黑洞或巨型黑洞, 而不可能先有各型黑洞再 吸收宇宙空间的质-能而后形成行星状星系。因形成 星云的时间要大大地短于恒星级黑洞形成的时间。

5\*。多宇宙存在的极大可能性。#7 我们宇宙巨 无霸黑洞 M<sub>bu</sub>≈ 10<sup>56</sup>g。根据计算,将现在整个宇宙退 回到其诞生时的普朗克领域时, 其球半径 ≈10<sup>-13</sup>cm, 就是说,初生的宇宙只有现在的一个氢原子的大小。 由于我们宇宙现在按照哈勃常数的速度膨胀,这表明 我们宇宙的质量 Mbu 还在继续增加, 宇宙的视界外面 还有能量-物质被吞噬进来。宇宙之外还有能量-物 质,就表明宇宙之外并非真空,就会还有其它宇宙的 能量-物质存在。而且,我们宇宙诞生时是如此之 小,如果是前辈大宇宙塌缩而成,就不太可能只塌缩 出唯一一个我们的宇宙泡泡, 定会同时塌缩出大小不 同的、像葡萄珠一样的许多宇宙小泡泡,我们宇宙只 程不需要上帝帮助。"本文所证明的大爆炸不是霍金 不过是其中之一个小泡泡或一粒葡萄而已。

美国北卡莱罗纳大学教堂山分校理论物理学家劳 拉・梅尔辛・霍顿 (the U.S. University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, theoretical physicist Laura Mersin Horton)早在2005年,她和卡耐基梅隆大学的时期的数据表二,准确而自洽地描述了宇宙作为黑洞 理査徳・霍尔曼教授提出了宇宙辐射存在异常现象的 理论,并估计这种情况是由于其它宇宙的重力吸引所 导致。今年3月,欧洲航天局公布了根据普朗克天文 望远镜捕捉到的数据绘制出的全天域宇宙微波背景辐 射图。这幅迄今为止最为精确的辐射图显示, 目前宇 宙中仍存在 138 亿年前的宇宙大爆炸所发出的辐射。 霍顿在接受采访时说:"这种异常现象是其他宇宙对 我们宇宙的重力牵引所导致的,这种引力在宇宙大爆 炸时期就已经存在。这是迄今为止, 我们首次发现有 其他宇宙存在的切实证据。"[13]

# 6\*。我们宇宙之外的'大宇宙'的结构可能就 是大黑洞内套诸多小黑洞的多层次多宇宙结构。

从上节可见, 我们宇宙巨无霸黑洞内的许多星系 中心有巨型黑洞,包括我们银河系中心巨型黑洞。在 我们宇宙空间,还有许多恒星级黑洞。如果某些巨型 黑洞内可能存在恒星级黑洞的话,那在我们宇宙就有 3层大小黑洞套着。既然我们宇宙外现在还有大量的 能量-物质被吞噬近来,而且近来已经发现已有外宇 宙的证据, 表明我们宇宙只不过是诞生于一串葡萄中 的一颗葡萄而已。至于我们宇宙之外有多少层大宇宙 黑洞套着我们宇宙黑洞,这是人类永远无法知道的。 人类本身不过是大宇宙中的短暂的过客而已。假如我 们宇宙内某巨型黑洞内有类地行星, 上面有高级智慧 生命, 我们都与他们都无法通讯, 对宇宙之外就更加 不可知了。

7\*。本来黑洞理论和宇宙学都来源于经典理论。 (D); 由此可见,应该是 只有用经典理论和公式才能解决其中许多重大和悬而 未决问题的,经典理论并未走到尽头。这或许就是作 者在文中能有幸的解决许多重大问题的缘故吧。

> 本文根据现成的经典理论就能阐明和推算出我们 宇宙诞生时的演变机理,条件和过程,这种演变过程 完全符合最新的观测数据和现有的物质世界的规律和 物理定律,如因果律,质能转变守恒定律,以及我们 现在宇宙黑洞的膨胀规律。

> 如果本文排除了宇宙诞生于"奇点"或者"奇点 的大爆炸"的不实论点,那就没有必要在宇宙创生时 给于任何特殊的边界条件,也不必乞灵于上帝的奇迹 或新物理学如量子引力论,弦论或超对称理论等,它 们只能对我们宇宙起源或对"宇宙大爆炸"作出诸多 牵强附会的解释.

> 北京时间 2013 年 5 月 6 日消息,据国外媒体报 道,著名宇宙学家史蒂芬-霍金日前在加利福尼亚理 工学院指出:"我们的宇宙在大爆炸中产生,这个过 所说的'奇点'的大爆炸,而是大量最小黑洞 Mbm 在 普朗克领域合并时的大爆炸。

> 8\*。本文用黑洞新理论计算出来的宇宙演变不同 的膨胀演变过程。近一百年来,无数科学家们耗尽心 血,也未提出宇宙演变任何一个时期的任何数据。而 且本文对宇宙诞生于最小黑洞、原初暴涨、宇宙膨胀 的哈勃定律都作出来理论的论证和数值的计算,还没 有任何一个数据是违反近代精密观测仪器的测量记录 的。因此本文可名符其实的称之为'黑洞宇宙学'。

> 本文根据黑洞的霍金辐射 mss 推导出的辐射能的 单位(单元)信息量  $I_0 = h/2\pi$  具有重要的意义。指出 了任何波长的辐射能虽有不同的波长和温度, 但具有 相同的能量。并且将质量--能量--信息量的关系定量 地统一起来了。

> 大家知道, 物质按照不同的温度呈现出有序连接 的液体态、固体态、气体态 3 态。本文在论证和计算 黑洞宇宙的演变过程中,似乎无意中看到了宇宙也有 3 态,黑洞新理论将这 3 态也有序地连接起来了。当 黑洞收缩成为最小黑洞时, 就成为宇宙中最高温最高 能的普朗克粒子状态,可比拟为气体态吧。当温度降 低到我们现在所处的黑洞宇宙时代, 或可比拟为物质 与能量共存和可互换的固体态吧。当我们宇宙外所有 的能量-物质被吞噬进我们宇宙黑洞后,宇宙就开始 不停地向外发射霍金辐射,经过极其漫长的时间,直 到最后变成为普朗克粒子而消失。于是宇宙空间充满 了霍金辐射—辐射能。宇宙这种了无生息的状态将如 何演变呢?这种太太遥远的事件又有谁能知道呢?可 见,人类在宇宙空间时间里,都是极其渺小短暂和极 其偶然出现的。这才是宇宙真理。

作者根据本文中的新理论、观点和公式还另作专 文探讨其它的一些黑洞和宇宙学中的重大问题,如推 演精密结构常数,探讨黑洞的熵,黑洞发射霍金辐射 的机理,宇宙的加速膨胀,人造黑洞,和对广义相对 论方程缺陷的分析和探讨等等,从多方面的验证本文 中新公式的真确性。

#### ====全文完====。

#### 【参考文献】:。

- [1]。王永久: <黑洞物理学>。湖南师范大学出版 社。2000年4月。公式(4.2.35)。
- [2]。苏宜: <天文学新概论>。华中科技大学出版社。2000年8月。
- [3]。何香涛: <观测天文学>。科学出版社。2002.4.
- [4]。向义和: <大学物理导论>.清华大学出版社, 1999.2.
- [5]。宇宙黑洞的演化过程、宇宙原初小黑洞M<sub>bom</sub> ≈ 10<sup>15</sup>g和大数假说 http://sciencepub.net/academia/aa0302

6/8/2013

[6]。广义相对论方程的根本缺陷是没有热力学效应,既无热力以对抗引力

#### http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/aa0212/

- [7]。 Jhon & Gribbin; Companion to The Cosmos (Chinise Version). 海南出版社。中国。2001.
- [8]。对宇宙加速膨胀的最新解释:这是由于在宇宙早期所发生的宇宙2黑洞间的碰撞所造成的. http://sciencepub.net/academia/aa0207/,
- [9]。人类也许永远不可能制造出任何真正的人造引力(史瓦西)黑洞. http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/0104
- [10] Giancoli, Donglasc. Physics, Principles With Application, 5<sup>th</sup> Edition, Upper Saddle River. NJ. Prentice Hall, 1998,
- [11]。方舟の女文章。

http://www.gaofamily.com/viewtopic.php?p=29139

- [12] 。天文学家首次清晰观测到银河系中心黑洞(图). http://www.enorth.com.cn 2008-09-05 08:45
- [13]。美科學家首次發現切實證據,稱宇宙或非唯 <u>http://www.chinareviewnews.com</u> 2013-05-21 16:27.

#### 对物理学和社会科学中一些基本观念的反思

#### 谭天荣

# 青岛大学物理学教授 ttr359@126.com

Abstract: 代序: 十二个故事. 我已年近八十,该好好回顾一下自己的一生了。我没有财产,没有儿女,也没有"事业",只有过去写下的一些手稿(还有腹稿)难以割舍。这些手稿,我从大学二年级开始,断断续续写了几十年,其中的一部分曾经在互联网上发表过,结果是既没有人支持也没有人反对。在北大时我曾和同班同学谈过一些有关的看法,记得一位同学私下表示过他的困惑: "真不知道他是怎么想的?"今天,我选择了部分手稿编成这本书,书名是《另类人生》,书的内容分为两个两部分。第一部分题为《生平与信仰》,写我的一些往事和我所理解的马克思主义;第二部分题为《另类物理学》,写我对物理学的某些异议。作为对这位同学的疑问的回答,我把自己当年写这些手稿的思路写成十二个故事。我期望这些故事除了能为这位同学排疑解惑之外,还可供其他读者茶余饭后消遣,如果还能进一步激起某些读者阅读这本书的兴趣,我就喜出望外了。

[谭天荣. **对物理学和社会科学中一些基本观念的反思**. Academia Arena 2013;5(6):21-29] (ISSN 1553-992X). <a href="http://www.sciencepub.net/academia">http://www.sciencepub.net/academia</a>. 2

Keywords: 人生; 信仰; 物理学; 解惑

#### 1. 关于"势能"的故事

从中学开始,我一直为"势能"这一概念而苦恼。"势能"从何而来?储存在什么地方?为什么会有负的势能?在落体运动中,"势能"怎样转移到落体并变成落体的动能?等等……。到了北大学习电动力学的时候,我总算得到了一个令自己满意的回答。

电动力学研究的不是重力场而是电磁场,电磁场的能量是"电磁场能",但电动力学中的"静电学"中也有"势能"这一概念,这就为我弄清楚"势能"与"场能"之间的关系打开了一个窗户。

按照静电学,静止的点电荷将激发一个静电场。考虑由两个静止的点电荷组成的系统,当两个点电荷远离时,它们各自激发一个静电场,系统的场能就是这两个静电场的场能之和;当它们靠近时,这两个静电场选加起来合成为一个,其场能就是系统的静电场能。这两个场能之差,乃是这两个点电荷相互靠近的过程中其静电场的场能的改变。我作了一个计算,证明这个改变量就是这两个点电荷的"相对势能"。如果两个点电荷都是正的,则过程中系统的静电场能会增加,从而势能是正的,反之,如果两个点电荷一正一负,则过程中系统的静电场能会减少,从而势能是负的。

我是在大学二年级的时候给出这一计算的,其 关键的一步是通过点电荷的静电场已知的"场强" 的表达式,用积分算出相隔一定距离的两个点电荷 的静电场能。通过这一推导我得出一般结论:

设有两个场组成一个系统,当这两个场相互分 离时,系统的场能是这两个场各自的场能之和;而 在两个场相遇并相互迭加,形成一个统一的场之后,系统的场能是这个统一的场的场能。这两个场能的差值,就是这两个场从"相互分离"的状态过渡到"相互迭加"的状态的过程中,系统的场能的改变。

我把这种"场能的改变量"称为该过程中这两个场的"迭加场能",而势能就是一种特殊的"迭加场能"。

这一结论使我兴奋得一夜未眠:"我可知道势能是怎么回事了!"然而当我试图与我对同学们分享我的快乐时,却完全意外地遭到冷遇,他们异口同声地说:"这有什么意义!"

从那时起,我隐约感到,我的同学们对物理世界的理解和我大不一样。我所理解的物理世界总是带着感性的微笑每日每时地向我招手。而他们却把物理世界看作一个神秘莫测的"奇迹王国",这个王国的状况越是稀奇古怪、匪夷所思,他们就越是感到亲切和欣喜。反之,对我身临其境的"感性的物理世界",他们却总是怀着莫名其妙的轻蔑与敌意。

# 2. 关于"光电效应"的故事

有了"迭加场能"的概念,我对重力场向落体转移能量的机制有了如下感性认识:

地球有一个引力场,即重力场,落体也有一个引力场。在落体进入重力场以后,这两个引力场相遇,其"迭加场能"就是"落体的势能"。当一个物体成为自由落体时,这个势能就立刻开始转化为物体的动能。于是,落体的势能转化为动能的过程,就是"重力场的能量转移给落体"的过程。

有了对"自由落体"的这种认识,当我在课堂上听到老师讲到"光电效应"时,立刻领悟到它是怎么回事:

电子有一个"固有电磁场",而光波则是另一个电磁场,当电子进入光波以后,这两个电磁场的"迭加场能"立刻转化为电子的动能,就像落体进入重力场以后落体的势能立刻转化为落体的动能一样。这就是在光电效应中,光波向自由电子转移能量的机制。

根据这种机制,当时我就知道光电效应为什么没有时间延迟,至于光电效应的其他性质,例如"光电子"的数目与入射光的强度成正比,"光电子"的动能与入射光的频率成线性关系等,过了不久我就弄清楚了。

然而,在物理学史上人们不是凭借"迭加场能"理解光电效应的。相反,人们接受了爱因斯坦为说明光电效应而创建的"光子论"。"迭加场能"立足于平易近人的逻辑推理,而"光子"则是怪诞不经的"新颖观念"。现在,"光子论"在人类思想史上成了千秋佳话,而"迭加场能"却恐怕永远也登不了大雅之堂。为什么会这样呢?记得一位哲人遇到类似的情况时,埋怨他所处的那个"充满卑鄙的成见与狡猾的妄想的时代",而我更愿意把这种现象归于人的天性:至少在物理学领域里,怪诞不经的"新颖观念"总比平易近人的逻辑推理更受欢迎!

#### 3. 关于"光子论"的故事

在"向科学进军"的 1956 年,我曾经试图对几位同班同学介绍我的如下看法:爱因斯坦的光子论把光电效应理解为一个静止的电子吸收一个光子的过程,这种机制满足能量守恒定律,可是它却明显地违背动量守恒定律:按照动量守恒定律,一个静止电子吸收了光子之后会沿着光线传播方向运动,可是事实上,光电子的运动方向却几乎与光线传播方向相反。可见光子论的建立是爱因斯坦的疏忽,而且是一个"稍加注意就能避免的疏忽"。

我的话刚一开始就被打断:"人家爱因斯坦是物理学的泰斗,你是谁,我们信他的还是信你的?"在他们看来这一论据是不容置疑的,可惜当时未能说服我。这种情况使他们极为苦恼:"谭天荣的问题不好解决!"

50多年以后,我们又在一次聚会上重逢,又扯了几句与光电效应有关的话。他们深感遗憾的是:"谭天荣的问题至今没有解决!"另一方面,我也觉得失望:他们已经是颇有名气的光学专家,但他们竟然忘记了光电效应是怎么回事!忘记了爱因斯坦光电效应公式!不仅如此,他们还忘记了关于光的"波粒二象性"的一切实验事实。诚然,对于"解决谭天荣的问题"他们仍然底气十足,因为爱因斯坦仍然是泰斗,谭天荣仍然是无名小卒,这就是他

们的全部论据,别的论据对于他们都是不必要的。

我想起了林昭对我说过的一个故事:一位旅行家漂流到一个小岛上,岛上的居民都得了一种怪病:他们看到的景象、听到的声音与现实世界的完全不同,但他们彼此之间的感知却是相通的。这位旅行家到岛上以后,岛上的居民一致认为他们遇到了一位"病人",正好他们有一套对症的"治病"方法,于是他们对这位"病人"进行"治疗"。可怜的旅行家险些儿被他们"治愈",幸运的是他在最后关头逃跑了。结果是岛上的居民继续在他们的"奇幻的世界"安居乐业,这位旅行家也继续过自己的旅行生活,就像不曾到过这个小岛一样。我不知道这位"旅行家"是小说家的虚构还是真有其人,但我总觉得自己与他同病相怜。

#### 4. 关于"波动方程"的故事

1956年的某一天我在北大上电动力学课时,老师说到:"波动方程的提早解违背因果律,因此我们放弃这个解。"我觉得难以接受:如果波动方程的"提早解"违背因果律,那么,要么是波动方程这个物理学规律有问题,要么是从波动方程得出"提早解"的"定解条件"有问题,我们该弄清楚到底是这两者的哪一个出了问题?如果是波动方程自身有问题,那么它的一切解都将违背因果律,事实并非如此,波动方程的"推迟解"就满足因果律。因此,肯定是提早解的"定解条件"有问题。那么,提早解的定解条件究竟是什么?这个定解条件究竟在什么地方出了什么问题?在我看来,不弄清楚这些问题是不能"放弃"提早解的!

还有,在我看来,因果律是一种比物理学规律 更高层次的规律,一个过程只要满足物理学规律就 自然满足因果律!而满足波动方程就意味着满足一 个对应的物理学规律,从而满足因果律,因此,波 动方程的每一个解都会满足因果律。既然如此,我 们怎能借助于因果律来选择一个方程应该用哪一 个解呢?

总之,我不能接受老师关于这个问题的结论,而这就意味着我不能接受前人关于这个问题的结论。于是我没日没夜解各式各样的波动方程达半年之久,终于得出结论:"提早解"描写一个特殊的波动过程,并不违背因果律。当我沿着这个方向继续探讨时,惊讶地发现:

第一,在原子的"卢瑟福模型"中,电子绕原子核旋转并不与经典物理学相矛盾,从而"原子世界有特殊规律"这一"波尔论断"的原始依据不成立。

第二,德布罗意波有双重含义:对于单个电子, 德布罗意波是作等速直线运动的电子的固有电磁 波的波函数中的一个因子。对于大量电子,德布罗 意波是电子束的固有电磁场的波函数的平均值。 第三,所谓"波粒二象性"的困惑源于人们忘记了电子有一个固有电磁场。

这就开始了我改写物理学的苦难历程,我把经过我改写的物理学称为"另类物理学"。

#### 5. 关于"万有引力"的故事

1958 年春天,我刚去北大荒的兴凯湖农场"劳动"就遇到"连阴天",老天爷一连下十来天雨,"队部"一时没有合适的工作安排给我们这些新来者干,只好让我们挤在宿舍里休息。我们这些来自五湖四海的"教养分子"有的睡觉,有的打牌,有的吵架,我也为自己找到了一种打发时间的方式:推导数学公式。那时我还记得拉普拉斯算符在球面坐标和柱面坐标下的表现形式,但这个算符在一般曲线坐标下的表现形式就记不清楚了,不妨推导一下。反正有的是时间,我用最一般的方式进行推导,没想到因此进入了一个陌生的领域。

当我导出了一些有关的公式以后,感到它们"似曾相识燕归来"。仔细一想,原来我在北大听过周培源老师一个关于广义相对论的讲座,我导出的公式与这个讲座中介绍的公式颇为相似。为什么会这样呢?当时我感到十分困惑。在导出了普拉斯算符在一般坐标下的表现形式之后,我就集中力量思考这种奇特的"相似性"到底是怎么回事。

我在北大上学时曾经看过前苏联的洛薛夫斯基写的《黎曼几何与张量解析》一书,懂得一点关于张量分析的皮毛,还发现了一件颇为有趣的事情:如果把静磁学的基本方程写成三维空间的张量方程的形式,再把这组方程读成四维时空的张量方程,就得到电磁学的基本方程。于是我立刻"依样画葫芦",把上面的描写三维空间曲线坐标性质的那些公式读成四维时空曲线坐标的对应的公式,这就发现了两个重要的事实:

第一,四维时空的曲线坐标的运算公式与黎曼几何的某些公式在形式方面颇为相似,但这两者的物理意义迥然不同。例如,黎曼几何中的"短程线方程"在形式上和四维时空曲线坐标中的等速直线运动方程一样,其中有一个因子在一个黎曼几何中称为"联络"的符号,而在四维时空曲线坐标中则是一个我称为"惯性力场"的张量。因此,四维时空曲线坐标中的张量运算与黎曼几何是两种完全不同的数学工具。

第二,从一个惯性系到另一惯性系的坐标变换是四维时空的"洛伦兹变换",而从惯性系到加速系的变换虽然不是"洛伦兹变换",但仍然是一种四维时空的"曲线坐标变换",与黎曼几何无关。因此,表现加速系的相对论运动学的数学工具是四维时空的曲线坐标运算,而不是黎曼几何。根据爱因斯坦的"等效原理",万有引力与加速系的惯性力等效,因此,黎曼几何不可能成为描写万有引力

的数学工具。

这两个事实使我确信,爱因斯坦的广义相对论 完全是误入歧途。爱因斯坦在这一领域的全部工作 都必须从头改写。

我的工作分两步走,第一步是在狭义相对论的框架内找到一种新的协变性,以取代"广义协变性"来表现加速系物理学方程的协变性,它是"洛伦兹协变性"在加速系的变形。我称这种新的协变性为"准洛伦兹协变性",它满足如下条件: 当惯性系因经历一个无穷小改变而变换到加速系时,物理学方程的协变性相应的改变也是无穷小的; 换句话说,当加速系趋近某一惯性系时,其物理学方程的协变性以"洛伦兹协变性"为极限。

第二步是通过对"等效原理"的重新表述,建立了一个新的引力场论。

#### 6. 关于"惯性"的故事

在北大上学时我对政治课的学习极为认真,阅读参考书也远远超过老师的要求。然而我使我真正接受马克思主义的却不是通过政治课,而是通过物理学。在马恩浩如烟海的经典著作中,恩格斯的《自然辩证法》最先令我入迷。

在大一学习普通物理时,我对"惯性"这一概念感到有点别扭:我记得老师是这样教的:

以同样大的力作用于不同质量的物体,则质量大的物体速度改变小,质量小的物体速度改变大。由此可见,物体有一种固有的"反抗运动改变"的性质,称为"惯性",而质量就是惯性的量度。

这种说法不容分说地把"速度"作为"运动"的量度。可是几乎在同时,老师向我们讲授"动量守恒原理",明确地把"动量"作为运动的量度。这不是自相矛盾吗?

不久,我就在《自然辩证法》这本书中,看到 恩格斯的如下命题:"力学,出发点是惯性,而惯 性只是运动不灭的反面表现。"我立刻对这一命题 作了如下解读:

"运动不灭"是指"动量守恒原理",按照这一原理,物体所受的力,等于它在单位时间中的运动改变。然而,牛顿不是用"动量"而是用"速度"来度量"运动",这就改变了整个概念体系。

如果在同一时间间隔内,以同样大小的力施于两个物体。根据动量守恒定律,这两个物体的动量有相同的改变,用恩格斯的话来说,在这两个物体身上"力的表现"是一样的。但是,由于动量是质量与速度的乘积,如果这两个物体的质量不同,则它们的速度改变是不同的,质量大的物体速度的改变小;质量小的物体速度的改变大。因此,如果像牛顿那样把速度作为运动的量度,则在相同的力作用下,物体的运动改变即"力的表现"是不一致的。牛顿把这种"不一致"理解为不同物体有不同的反

抗运动改变的性质——惯性。

因此,"惯性"这一概念,乃是由于把速度作为运动的量度而引起的对动量守恒原理的曲解。幸运的是,这种曲解仅限于力学(牛顿的力学),而没有波及热学、电学以及物理学的其他分支,从而"惯性"这一概念仅仅出现在力学中。因此,恩格斯才说:"力学,出发点是惯性。"

另一方面,哲学中的运动不灭原理本来表现为"力的表现与力的一致",而在牛顿力学中,它却相反地表现为"力的表现对力的偏离",即表现为"惯性"。在这种意义下,恩格斯说"惯性是运动不灭的反面表现"。

从此,我就迷上了《自然辩证法》这一经典著作,并且得到这样的印象:这本书中的大部分内容只有在读者把当年恩格斯的思路重走一遍的情况下才能看懂。

### 7. 关于"革命的遗嘱"的故事

我上北大时,《联共党史》是政治课的内容之一。我一向用学习数理科学的思想方法学习政治课,而这种思想方法对于学习《联共党史》似乎难以适用,因此,学习《联共党史》成了最令我苦恼的课程。然而,我还是极为认真地学这门课,作为这门课的参考书,我开始广泛地阅读马恩的经典著作,《共产党宣言》是其中的第一本。

记得上中学时,一位同学对我说:"这几天我一直在看《共产党宣言》,从头至尾我就看懂了一句话:'一个怪影在欧洲游荡。'"听到他的话,我很长时间不敢打开《共产党宣言》这本书。这对我是幸运的,因为到了我自己读这本书时,我读了好几遍才大致知道它说了些什么,如果我读得更早,我将一无所获。然而,当我进一步钻研这本书时,开始对其中的某些观点感到不理解。例如,作者们在该书中提出了一种新历史观,马克思在《政治经济学批判序言》一文中,对它作了详尽的阐述,其中关键的一个命题是:"经济基础决定政治上层。"而恩格斯则在《共产党宣言》1883年德文版序言中把它表述为:

每一历史时代的经济生产以及必然由此 产生的社会结构,是该时代政治的和精 神的历史的基础。

《共产党宣言》以国际资产阶级的生成和发展 作为这种新历史观的例子:

"现代资产阶级本身是一个长期发展过程的产物,是生产方式和交换方式的一系列变革的产物。

"资产阶级的这种发展的每一个阶段, 都伴随着相应的政治上进展。它在封建 主统治下是被压迫的等级,在公社里是 武装的和自治的团体,在一些地方组成 独立的城市共和国,在另一些地方组成 君主国中的纳税的第三等级;后来,在 工场手工业时期,它是等级制君主国或 专制君主国中同贵族抗衡的势力,而且 是大君主国的主要基础;最后,从大工 业和世界市场建立的时候起,它在现代 的代议制国家里夺得了独占的政治统 治。现代的国家政权不过是管理整个资 产阶级的共同事务的委员会罢了。"

按照上面的描写,资产阶级的政治上的提高与它的经济的发展总是同步的,既然如此,怎见得是它的经济地位决定它的政治地位而不是相反呢?我开玩笑地把上面那段话改写成:

诚然,这种改写只是一种文字游戏,并没有什么学术价值。但我却以为自己从相同的历史事实得出了与恩格斯的上述命题相反的结论:"在人类社会中,政治形态的演进是原因,而经济结构的改变则是结果。"并由此得出结论:《共产党宣言》虽然提出了一种新历史观,却并没有证明它。在我看来,为了证明马恩的新历史观,必须证明,当政治发展与经济发展的方向相互冲突时,经济发展的方向扭转了政治发展的方向。于是我试图从马克斯与恩格斯的其他著作中找到证明他们的新历史观的论据。

正当我在"寻寻觅觅"时,恩格斯在《共产党宣言》1893年意大利文版序言的一段话引起了我的注意。

"1848年革命……使得意大利和德国在1848-1871年期间得到复兴并以这种或那种形式重新获得独立。……这是因为,正如马克思所说,那些镇压1848年革命的人违反自己的意志充当了这次革命的遗嘱执行人。"

恩格斯认为这一历史事实证实了马克思极为 偏爱并且一再重复的如下命题: 在社会革命遭到镇压之后,镇压革命的 人必将违反自己的意志充当革命的遗嘱 执行人。

在我看来,马克思的这一命题才确切地证明了 "经济基础决定政治上层"的观点。

另一方面,按照我思考问题的习惯,从马克思的这个关于"革命的遗嘱"的命题我得出与它对称的命题:

如果在新的生产关系生存的物质条件尚未成熟时,革命领袖和革命政党就已经 夺取了政权,那么,不论他们是多么坚 定的革命者,一旦执政,就不得不违反 自己的意志充当了被他们镇压的反革命 的遗嘱执行人。

大约十年之后,我将这一命题应用于分析中国的"文化大革命",得出这一历史进程是中国当代史的必然阶段的结论。

#### 8. 关于"价值"的故事

如果说《联共党史》是最令我苦恼的课程,那 么政治经济学就是最令我开心的课程。作为学习政 治经济学的参考书,我逐章逐节地阅读马克思的 《资本论》。然而,直到上世纪80年代我才有了一 次应用的机会。

改革开放以后不久,王若水写了一篇颇有影响的文章,题为《我的马克思主义观》,这篇文章提出一个论点:"劳动价值论不适用于脑力劳动。"

王若水把劳动价值论理解为"一个商品的价值决定于制造这个商品所需要的社会平均必要劳动时间"(下面简称"平均劳动时间")。在他看来,把劳动价值论应用于制造"桌子"之类的劳动还差强人意,可应用于文学作品的写作就简直荒谬绝伦。他问道:对于鲁迅写的《阿Q正传》这一文学作品,怎么计算平均劳动时间?如果除了鲁迅以外,还有张三,李四也写了《阿Q正传》的人写这本书所投入的劳动时间加起来,再除以人数,就得到写《阿Q正传》的平均劳动时间,这个时间就是《阿Q正传》的价值。可事实上,只有鲁迅一个人写了《阿Q正传》的价值。可事实上,只有鲁迅一个人写了《阿Q正传》的价值。可事实上,只有鲁迅一个人写了《阿Q正传》的价值。可事实上,只有鲁迅一个人写了《阿Q正传》的价值。可事实上,只有鲁迅一个人写了《阿Q正传》的价值。可事对价值论不适用于鲁迅写《阿Q正传》这样的脑力劳动。

王若水还说:"写作一小时总比造桌子一小时的劳动复杂得多。那么怎么计算?按计算复杂劳动的办法也不行,因为这里有天才,有灵感,这是根本不可能计量化的。按照一部文学作品的创作时间来衡量其价值,这是可笑的。"

通过鲁迅的《阿Q正传》这一例子,王若水得出一般结论:"劳动价值论是以体力劳动为基础的。应用到简单劳动上,好像没有什么问题;应用到复

杂劳动上,就有些困难;应用到单纯的脑力劳动上,特别是创造性的脑力劳动上,就完全不行了。"

从王若水的上述论点,我立刻想到马克思在《资本论》中曾经特别论述过的"金刚石的价值"的问题。金刚石很稀少,但却不是脑力劳动的产品,如果说写文学作品靠的是天才与灵感,那么拾到金刚石靠的则是"运气"。如果说天才与灵感"根本不可能计量化",那么"运气"这个东西也同样不能"计量"!设想一位幸运者在某处拾到一块金刚石,价格不菲。用这位幸运者拾到这块金刚石的"劳动时间"来计量这块金刚石的价值似乎也是"可笑"的。那么,马克思是怎么把劳动价值论应用于"金刚石的价值"的呢?

在《资本论》中我没有找到能直接回答这一问题的章节,但我在这一著作的字里行间领会到:马克思说到"金刚石的价值"时考虑的不是个别幸运者拾到某一块金刚石的"劳动时间",他是通过大量工人开采金刚石矿的"劳动时间"来计量的。因此,某一块金刚石的价值,并不是这块金刚石自身的属性,而是大量金刚石的属性,确切地说,是某一有大量元素的"金刚石集合"的属性。同样,《阿Q正传》的价值,也不是这一文学作品自身的属性,而是某一"文学作品的集合"的属性。

这样,商品、商品集合以及价值三个概念就形成一种复杂的关系。为了阐明这种关系,我引进了一个新用语——"映射",并提出如下命题:

A: 如果用 a 表示某一商品,则在"商品 a 的价值"这一词组中,"价值"并不是商品 a 的属性,而是在商品 a 的身上"映射"某一"商品集合"的属性。

但是,在约定俗成的习惯用语中,正如在"张三的身高"这一词组中,"身高"是张三的属性一样,在"商品 a 的价值"这一词组中,"价值"应该是商品 a 的属性。这就与"价值"这一概念的本意相矛盾了。我把这种矛盾称为"语义的错位"。对于劳动价值论,这个"语义的错位"是一个概念的陷阱。

回头来看王若水的上述论据,当他断言"劳动价值论按照一部文学作品的创作时间来衡量其价值"时,当他从"天才与灵感不可计量"的前提得出"文学作品的价值不可计量"的结论时,他肯定把《阿Q正传》的价值误解为这一文学作品自身的属性了。正是这种误解使他得出"劳动价值论不适用于脑力劳动"的错误结论。

王若水的失误,不是一时的考虑不周,不是偶然的疏忽大意。相反,他是小心翼翼而又深思熟虑地落入了一个概念的陷阱。

### 9. 关于"概率"的故事

上世纪 90 年代, 我在互联网上看到了英国哲

人卡尔·波普尔的一些著作,其中既有《科学发现的逻辑》那样的以数理科学为基本内容的名著,又有《开放社会及其敌人》那样的人文科学的佳作。在二十世纪,同时涉猎这两个相距甚远的领域的学者似乎不多,因此作者波普尔引起了我的兴趣。

看过这些著作以后,我觉得《开放社会及其敌人》一书是一本难得的好书,其中有许多颇为精彩的论述,然而我对波普尔的思想方法有异议。我曾经有过评论这一著作的冲动,但很快就放弃了,因为我知道,评论这本书将使我腹背受敌。

《科学发现的逻辑》一书颇为全面地表述了波普尔的概率理论与量子理论,这本书比《开放社会及其敌人》更使我激动。我的一生都在研究量子力学,我相信现存的量子力学就像十七世纪的微积分一样,虽然取得辉煌的成果,但其基础却还有待建立。困难的是,这个题目太大,我找不到一个合适的切入点。波普尔在该书中从概率理论的角度考察量子力学,从而既避开了敏感而又艰深的物理理论问题,又能接触到量子力学中的那些脍炙人口的疑难,这是一条相当巧妙的途径。波普尔的这一思路引导我钻研"概率"的课题。

在我的一生中遇到很多的疑难,其中最烦人的 疑难就是"语义的错位",不是我自己想不透,而 是和别人说不清,因为我们这个星球的人可以接受 任何荒谬绝伦的观念,就是不能接受稍稍有一点曲 折的逻辑推理。换句话说,他们欣然接受匪夷所思 的幻想,却无法忍受深入一步的思考。

我最先遇到这一疑难并不是在"价值"这一概念上。而是在"概率"这一概念上遇到的类似的"语义的错位"。

正如在"商品 a 的价值"这一词组中,"价值"不是商品 a 的属性一样,在"事件 b 的概率"这一词组中,概率也不是事件 b 的属性。

例如,在日常生活中,我们经常遇到像"张三 得心脏病的概率是 3%"这样的概率陈述,在这一 陈述有意义的限度内,它是指

第一,某一人群 E 有 3%的人得了心脏病;

第二,张三属于人群 E。

因此,这里的 3%这一概率所表现的,不是张 三的健康情况,而是人群 E 的健康情况。令人困惑的是,它不是直接描写人群 E 的健康情况,而是通过张三这一单个成员曲折地反映人群 E 的健康情况。从这个例子我得出一般结论:

B: 在"事件 b 的概率"这一词组中,概率并不是事件 b 的属性,而是在事件 b 身上"映射"某一"事件集合"的属性。

这一命题表明,就像"价值"这一概念一样,"概率"这一概念也蕴含一个"语义的错位",从

而也形成一个概念的陷阱。

王若水把"商品 a 的价值"误解为商品 a 的属性,陷入了一个"概念的陷阱",得出了"劳动价值论不适用于脑力劳动"的错误结论。那么。如果有人把"事件 b 的概率"误解为事件 b 的属性,会不会陷入另一个"概念的陷阱",从而得出一个对应的错误结论呢?

我们不妨考虑如下经验事实:

C: 多次把一个硬币随手一掷,则硬币一会出现正面,一会出现反面,但掷的次数越多,就会发现出现正面的次数与出现反面的次数越接近。

人们把这一经验事实表述为:"把一个硬币随手一掷,硬币出现正面的概率与出现反面的概率相等。"或者说,把一个硬币随手一掷,硬币落定以后的状态的"概率分布"是"正面占 1/2,反面占1/2。"根据命题 C,"正面占1/2,反面占1/2"这一"概率分布"是"大量硬币"的属性。

问题在于:如果把这个概率分布理解为"单个硬币"的属性,那么我们会得出什么结论呢?唯一可能的结论是:这枚硬币有半个正面半个反面?于是,人们从命题 C 这一经验事实得出了结论:

D: 把一个硬币随手一掷,硬币出现半个正面和半个反面合在一起的图形。"

这一命题太古怪了,没有一个正常人会这样理解"概率"!不幸的是,量子物理学家们却实际上断言:有一个匪夷所思的微观世界,概率的含义正是如此!我把这种对"概率"的这种误解,称为"哥本哈根迷误"。这种误解是人们从"测不准关系"得出"电子的运动不是轨道运动"的结论的论据之一

#### 10. 关于"薛定谔猫"的故事

"薛定谔猫"这一理想实验我是在上世纪 70 年代在老家(湖南湘乡)"接受贫下中农再教育"时偶然在一本书上看到的,这本书对"薛定谔猫"作了如下叙述:

把一只猫和一个扳机同置于一个钢箱中,扳机的构造如下:放在盖革计数器中的少量放射性物质在一个小时内有原子衰变和没有原子衰变的概率相等,如果它有原子衰变,计数器就产生反应,并作用于一个连着一个小锤的继电器,使小锤打碎一个装有氢氰酸的瓶子,从而毒死关在箱中的猫。猫不能直接接触扳机,因此,如果放射性物质没有原子衰变,猫就还活着。于是,将猫置于箱中恰好到一个小时之际,箱中的猫活着与死去的概率各占一半。按照量子力学的哥本哈根诠释将得出结论:"此时箱中将有半只活猫与半只死猫混合在一起,或者模糊不清。"简而言之,薛定谔猫处于半死半活状态。

我立刻得出结论:薛定谔在这里是揭露哥本哈根迷误。按照我的理解,这一理想实验的推理如下:

- 1,正如王若水把"商品 a 的价值"误解为商品 a 的属性一样, 哥本哈根学派把"事件 b 的概率"误解为事件 b 的属性,但这一误解仅限于微观世界。
- 2,原子衰变是一个微观事件,因此,根据量子力学的哥本哈根诠释,放射性物质在一个小时内"有原子衰变和没有原子衰变的概率相等"意味着"有一个原子一半衰变了而另一半没有衰变"。
- 3,扳机的作用在于保证: "如果放射性物质有原子衰变,则猫死亡;如果放射性物质没有原子衰变,则猫活着。"即保证微观事件"原子衰变"与宏观事件"猫的死亡"相互等价。
- 4,根据布尔代数的一个原理:相互等价的价事件的概率具有同样的含义,从而从命题2和命题3得出结论:在猫进入箱中一小时之际,将处于半死半活状态。

数年前,我在互联网上看到一篇介绍格利宾(John R. Gribbin)写的关于"薛定谔的猫"的书,其中提到格利宾的如下观点:"'薛定谔的猫'涉及到量子理论的整个发展过程"。这种观点使我大为惊讶。"薛定谔猫"中的扳机的作用明明在于:"如果微观世界的概率有哥本哈根诠释所给与的含义,则宏观世界的概率也有同样的含义。"因此"薛定谔猫佯谬"只是一个对概率的理解的问题,与量子力学的其他问题(例如波粒二象性问题,测量问题等)完全无关,根本不会涉及到量子理论的整个发展过程。

### 11. 关于"测量理论"的故事

除了上述"语义的错位",概率这一概念的还有另一个恼人的特征:概率与观察者不可分离。这一事实本来没有什么难解之处:"概率"者,"可能性"也,任何一个正常的人只要稍微想一想就能得出结论:一件事情的"可能性"有多大不仅与这件事情本身有关,而且与"观察者"的认识有关,从而是因人而异的。正是由于没有弄清楚概率与观察者之间的这种显而易见的关系,导致了量子力学中的最令人困惑的"测量理论"。

冯·诺伊曼在《量子力学的数学基础》一书中 提出了或许是最早的测量理论,这个理论的断言:

E: 观察者在测量终结时看到仪器指针的 读数,是导致被测量的对象从不确定状态过渡到确定状态的决定性因素。因此,如果不提到人类意识,就不可能表述一个完备的、前后一贯的量子力学的测量 理论。

要理解这一命题,首先要弄清楚什么是"对象的不确定状态"。

如果将一个硬币往桌面上随手一掷, 当硬币还

没有在桌面上落定时,硬币的状态(指正面朝上还是反面朝上)还是不确定的,当硬币已经落定,你也看到了硬币哪一面朝上,则硬币的状态是确定的。糟糕的是人们忽视了一个问题:当硬币已经在桌面上落定,但观察者还没有看到它哪一面朝上时,这时硬币处于什么状态呢?

硬币已经落定,它的状态在客观上已经确定;但你作为观察者还没有看到它哪一面朝上,因此观察者对硬币的状态的主观认识还没有确定。由于硬币存在这样的"第三种状态","确定"与"不确定"这一对范畴在这里已经不再适用。为了确切地表现硬币的状态,我们不得不引进更精致的用语:把"客观上的确定"称为"决定",把"主观上的确定"称为"明确"。这样,当硬币还没有在桌面上落下时,硬币的状态既未决定,也不明确,我们称这种状态为"未决状态";当硬币已经落定,我们也看到了硬币哪一面朝上,则硬币的状态已经决定而且已经明确,我们称这种状态为"已知状态";当硬币已经落定,而观察者还没有看到了硬币哪一面朝上,则硬币的处于已经决定但尚未明确的状态,我们称这种状态为"暧昧状态"。

显然,在命题 A 中,冯 ·诺伊曼这里说的"确定状态"是指"已知状态",问题在于,他说的"不确定状态"是指"未决状态"还是"暧昧状态"?

要回答这一问题,得弄清楚命题 A 中的"确定"或"不确定"这一对用语与"概率"之间的关系:如果某一对象出现某种状态的概率大于 0 而且小于 1,则这一对象的状态是"不确定"的;反之,如果该对象出现某种状态的概率为 0 或者 1,这一对象的状态就是"确定"的。当硬币从未决状态过渡到暧昧状态时,硬币出现正面的概率保持不变,始终是 1/2;反之,当硬币从暧昧状态过渡到已知状态时,硬币出现正面的概率从 1/2 突变为 0 或 1。在命题 A 中,观察者看到仪器指针的读数,改变的是测量对象处于某种状态的概率,从而肯定是从暧昧状态过渡到已知状态,即观察者对被测量的对象的状态从不明确过渡到明确,也就是使得观察者对被测量的对象的状态的主观认识从不确定过渡到确定,这原是一件显而易见的事情。

不幸的是,冯·诺伊曼却把命题 A 中的"不确定状态"理解为"未决状态",从而把这一命题理解为:在测量终结时看到仪器指针的读数,使得被测量的对象的状态从尚未决定过渡到已经决定,也就是使得对被测量的对象的客观状态从不确定过渡到确定,这就匪夷所思了。

由此可见,正是由于混淆了"决定"与"明确" 这两个概念,从而混淆了"未决状态"与"暧昧状态"两种状态,才使得冯•诺伊曼把"人类意识" 引进了他的测量理论。 德国物理学家吉·路德维希与冯·诺伊曼有同样的概念混淆,从而同样得出测量过程改变被测量的对象的客观状态的结论,但他却拒绝"感觉"、"知识"和"意识"等用语出现在物理学中。于是他把宏观仪器看成一个处于热力学亚稳态的宏观系统,把测量理解为宏观仪器受到微观系统的扰动向热力学稳态演化。这样,测量不再是"客体与主体之间的一个不可分的链环",而是"一个微观系统与一个宏观系统之间的一个不可分的链环"。

我提出了一个用实验判断这两种类型的测量 理论孰是孰非的建议,并预言实验将同时否定这两 种理论。果真如此,则量子力学的整个测量理论完 全是海市蜃楼。

### 12. 关于"贝尔不等式"的故事

在数理科学中,"概率"是一个极为难缠的概念,稍不留意,它就给我们带来困扰。如果说"薛定谔猫"和"测量理论"这样的匪夷所思的奇谈怪论来自与概率这一概念有关的概念混淆,那么贝尔定理——定域隐变量理论不能重复量子力学的全部统计预言——就源于一个与概率运算有关的极为初等的数学错误。

量子力学伴随着一种新的概率计算程序,对应 地,原来的概率计算程序就被称为"经典概率论"。 对于量子力学来说,经典概率论是不必要的。但是, 如果把经典概率论应用于微观物理学是不是一定 会与量子力学相矛盾,还是相反,在某种条件下经 典概率论也会与量子力学殊途同归呢?这个问题 并不艰深,可是一直没有人认真考虑它,因此迄今 为止,它还是微观物理学的一个盲区。对于量子力 学自身的发展来说,这个盲区的存在并不碍事,但 当问题涉及量子力学与经典物理学之间的关系时, 人们就难免会在这个盲区里误入歧途,贝尔定理就 是一例。

贝尔定理的证明多种多样,但万变不离其宗,这些证明都用到经典概率论,特别是用到其中的关于"联合概率"的运算规则,这些规则既不属于量子力学,也不是定域隠变量理论的组成部分。因此,在没有弄清楚这些规则是否适用于微观过程之前,无论从量子力学出发还是从定域隐变量理论出发,都不能应用它们。不幸的是,关于这些运算规则是否适用微观过程的问题,刚好落在这个微观物理学的盲区之内。因此贝尔定理的研究引导物理学家们走进了该盲区,人们在这里不自觉地遵循如下准则:当他们从量子力学的角度考虑问题时,默认这些规则全都不适用于微观过程,当他们从定域隐变量理论的角度考虑问题时,又默认这些规则全都适用于微观过程。贝尔定理就是这一荒谬的准则的产物。

在我之前, 法国物理学家吉·洛查克 (G.

Lochak)已经证明:贝尔不等式来自经典概率论,与"实在论"和"定域性原理"都没有关系。我的工作在于弄清楚经典概率论的哪一个组成部分导致贝尔不等式。结论是:第一,经典概率论的"事件运算公式",即布尔代数公式,不适用于微观物理学,而贝尔不等式就是将布尔代数运用于微观世界的非布尔空间得出的结论。第二,经典概率论的"概率运算公式"(主要是加法公式与乘法公式)适用于微观物理学,甚至可以导出量子力学的自旋相关公式。

贝尔对自己的工作有两点误解:第一,贝尔用以导出贝尔不等式的隐变量理论具有极为特殊的性质:它原封不动地保留了全部经典概率论的运算规则,贝尔却把这种理论当成一般的"定域隐变量理论"。第二,当贝尔从他的隐变量理论导出贝尔不等式时应用了两个命题,他把其中之一理解为"定域隐变量理论"的特征,而实际上导出贝尔不等式的却是另一命题。此外,我还考察过贝尔定理的另外两种证明,以及吉·洛查克对贝尔定理的异议。

\* \* \* \* \* \*

从上面的十二个故事可以看出我建立的"另类物理学"是涉及物理学各个领域的一种新物理学。 对这种新物理学作出评价不是我工作,但有一个问题我似乎有责任作出回答:为什么建立这种新物理学的人偏偏是我。

我年轻的时候一直相信,一个人的性格、禀赋、素质,总之,一个人的一切精神特征,都是由环境造成的,都是他受的教育和他周围的人潜移默化的结果。但今天我改变了看法,我相信人们的这些特征主要是天生的。俗话说:性格决定命运,既然性格主要是天生的,一个人命运也就是一生下来就基本注定了。

常听人说什么"可意会不可言传",这个词用在文学上,或许意味深长,但用在科学上,我却不敢苟同。在我看来,特别是在数学和物理学中,从来不会有可意会不可言传的东西。只要我真的"意会"了,我就一定能"言传"。确切地说,一个实验事实,一个概念,一个定律,只要我自己弄懂了,我就一定能把它说清楚,决不会有暧昧不明之处。反过来,这些东西只有在我确切的表达了它之后,我才能算是真正理解了它。

由于我的这种天生的个人特征,在学习经典物理学时,我已经遇到一些问题得不到满意的回答,例如一些习题,我不满意标准答案。一些概念,我不满意书上的阐述,一些前人的结论,我认为是不确切的,甚至是错误的。但这些情况并没有引起明显的冲突,因此我不曾注意。直到学习量子力学时,我的这种特异的性格才完全显露出来:我完全不能

接受量子力学。

记得在学习量子力学之前,老师们警告我们,不要受经典物理学的偏见的束缚,只有完全放弃过去那些传统的想法,才能接受量子力学的新观点。那时老师们还特别喜欢引用列宁在《唯物主义与经验批判主义》一书中的一段话:大意是,不论物理学中的观念和结论多么古怪、多么神奇、多么不可思议,都是"辩证唯物主义的光辉证实"。听到这种说法我极为反感:既然要我们放弃偏见,就不该把这种先入为主的观念灌输给我们,应该让我们按照自己的思路来理解。

我们学习的量子力学教程是前苏联物理学家 布洛欣采夫写的,凡是量子力学中的关键性的命 题,都打上圈圈点点的重点符号,却完全不讲任何 道理。不言而喻,对于这样的教条,我一条也不能 接受。

正是在这时,我通过解波动方程发现:所谓经典物理学不能说明量子现象的一切论据,原来都是因为人们忽略了一个基本事实——电子自身有一个"固有电磁场"。从此我确立了一个信念:量子现象是可以通过经典物理学来说明的。

说到这里,难免有人问,一百多年来,从来没有人对这些基本问题提出过质疑,难道你自认为是百年来全世界智商最高的人吗?不!不用说全世界,就在我的北大同学中间,我的考试成绩并不突出,看来我的智商也不过是中等,这一点我有自知之明。然而我认为,在物理学的现状下要有所突破,需要的并不是超人一等的智力,而是另一种禀赋。

物理学家们一直在禁止初学者独立思考,例

如,前苏联物理学家朗道就说:"量子力学永远不可能被理解,你只需要去习惯它。"美国物理学家费曼也说:"全世界没有一个人能理解量子力学。"每日每时,全世界的物理学家们和物理教师们都在这样诲人不倦地教导他们的学生。在这种气氛下,物理学的初学者实际上是在半催眠状态下接受量子力学的基本观点,而当他们在量子力学领域里做进一步的工作时,则处于完全催眠状态下。这使我想起了前苏联电影《沙特阔》的一位印度催眠师的名言:"长眠就是幸福。"一代又一代的量子物理学家们,就是在幸福催眠状态下贡献自己一生的。

在我看来,我的在物理学史上的作用不仅是"拨乱反正",而且是"起死回生"(波尔的"互补原理"就是物理学死亡的正式判决书)。果真如此,那并不是我智商超人一等,而是因为我独特的穷追不舍的个性,这种个性对催眠有天生的抵抗力。我不得不相信,我的这种个性在物理学史上是独一无二的.

#### Reference

- 1. 恩格斯. 《共产党宣言》. 1893.
- 2. 《联共党史》.
- 3. 鲁迅. 《阿O正传》.
- 4. Chun-Xuan Jiang. Beyond the Newtonian Gravitational Theory and Overthrow the Einstein Gravitational Theory. *Academ Arena* 2012;4(7):27-32. (ISSN 1553-992X). http://www.sciencepub.net/academia.

====全文完====

6/11/2013

# Optimization of energy required and energy analysis for rice production using data envelopment Analysis approach

\* Adel ranji (Corresponding author), \*\* Behnam Ghasemzadeh

- \* Young Researchers and Elite Club, Takestan Branch, Islamic Azad University, Takestan, Iran
- \*\* Young Researchers And Elite Club, Tabriz Branch, Islamic Azad University Tabriz Iran

**Abstract:** The objective of this study was the application of non-parametric method of data envelopment analysis (DEA) to analyze the efficiency of farmers, discriminate efficient farmers from inefficient ones and to identify wasteful uses of energy for rice production in Mazandaran province, Iran. This method was used based on seven energy inputs including human labor, machinery, diesel fuel, fertilizers, biocide, Irrigation and seed energy and three output of rice( yield, straw and husk). Technical, pure technical, scale and cross efficiencies were calculated using CCR and BCC models for farmers. From this study the following results were obtained: from the total of 72 farmers, considered for the analysis, 9.7 % and 22.2 % were found to be technically and pure technically efficient, respectively. The average values of technical, pure technical and scale efficiency scores of farmers were found to be 0.78, 0.95 and 0.82, respectively. The energy saving target ratio for rice production was calculated as 7.47 %, indicating that by following the recommendations resulted from this study, about 4.57 GJ ha<sup>-1</sup> of total input energy could be saved while holding the constant level of rice yield. The comparative results of energy indices revealed that by optimization of energy consumption, energy efficiency, energy productivity and net energy with respect to the actual energy use can be increased by 7.46 %, 7.46 % and 5.54 %, respectively.

[Adel ranji, Behnam Ghasemzadeh. **Optimization of energy required and energy analysis for rice production using data envelopment Analysis approach.** *Academia Arena* 2013;5(6):30-40] (ISSN 1553-992X). http://www.sciencepub.net/academia. 3

Keywords: Data envelopment, CCR and BCC models, analysis Optimization, Technical efficiency, Rice

#### Introduction

Rice (*Oryza sativa* L.) is the staple food of more than a half of the world population (Sinha and Talati, 2007; Ginigaddara and Ranamukhaarachchi, 2009). The global rice production is 454.6 million ton annually, which has a yield of 4.25 ton/ha. The average yield is about 4.9 ton/ha in Iran, which is the 11th rice producer in the world (IRRI, 2010). However, Iran consumes about 2.05 million ton of its production inside the country. For the last decades, rice consumption has been expanding beyond the traditional rice-growing areas, particularly in western Asia and Europe. In most countries, surveillance measures are taken regarding the presence of different elements in important foodstuff (Samadi Maybodi and Atashbozorg, 2006).

The energy ratio and specific energy of farmers in crop production systems are indices, which can define the efficiency and performance of farms. Considerable studies have been conducted on energy use in agricultural production (Canakci and Akinci, 2006; Cetin and Vardar, 2008; Erdal et al., 2007; Mikkola and Ahokas, 2010; Mobtaker et al., 2010; Mohammadi and Omid, 2010; Ozkan et al., 2007; Rafiee et al., 2010; Unakitan et al., 2010; Zangeneh et al., 2010). Technical efficiency (weighted output energy to weighted input energy ratio) is another way to explain the efficiency of farmers (Nassiri and Singh, 2009). Data envelopment analysis (DEA) is a

non-parametric technique of frontier estimation which has been used and continues to be used extensively in many settings for measuring the efficiency and benchmarking of decision making units (DMUs) (Adler et al., 2002). In recent years, many authors have applied DEA in agricultural researches: Chauhan et al. (2006) applied DEA approach to determine the efficiencies of farmers with regard to energy use in rice production activities in India. The results reveal that, on an average, about 11.6% of the total input energy could be saved if the farmers follow the input package recommended by the study. Nassiri and Singh (2009) applied DEA technique to determine the efficiencies of farmers with regard to energy use in paddy producers in Punjab state (India). Results revealed that small farmers had high energy-ratio and low specific energy requirement as compared to larger ones at paddy farms. Although there was high correlation between technical efficiency and energyratio, comparison between correlation coefficient of farmers in different farm categories and different zones showed that energy-ratio and specific energy are not enhanced indices for explaining of all kinds of the technical, pure technical and scale efficiency of farmers.

The specific energy used by paddy was 5.87 MJ/kg. Research on paddy carried out by Singh et al. (1994) showed that there was quadratic relationship between crop yield and pre-harvest energy input. The

yield showed Robb's parabolic relationship with irrigation, fertilizer, both irrigation and fertilizer and total energy input. Singh et al. (1997) reported that output-input ratio for paddy in Punjab was 3.96 and specific energy was 5.77 MJ/kg. Manes and Singh (2003) reported that human, animal; diesel, electricity, farmyard manure, fertilizer and chemicals, canal and machinery together had significant effect on the production of paddy in zones, 2, 3 and 4 in Punjab. It was observed that fertilizer had more effect on the yield. Energy-ratio and specific energy was extensively used to measure the efficiency of systems (Boehmel et al, 2008; Singh, 1990)...

In a study by Mythili and Shanmugam (2000) attempt was made to measure the farm level technical inefficiency which can be a dominant factor in explaining the difference between potential and observed yields of rice for a given technology and input level. The Cobb-Douglas stochastic frontier function with input costs and a single-output was used as production function. According to results small farmers (below 1 ha area) had the lowest mean technical efficiency value. Singh (2001) in his research work fitted the Cobb-Douglas frontier for his data on major crops (wheat, paddy, maize and cotton) in different agro-climatic zones of Punjab state (India) in years 1997-1999. During this study technical efficiency and sensitivity of function were also calculated. There was difference between average efficiency in operation-wise and source wise in all crops. Reddy and Sen (2004) quantified technical efficiency in rice production and investigated the influence of farm specific socio-economic characteristics on inefficiency. It was obtained that technical inefficiency in rice production decreased with increase in farm size.

Mousavi-Avval et al. (2011b) employed the DEA technique to analyze the efficiencies of apple producers in Tehran province of Iran. Results indicated that 11.3% of total energy input could be saved if the recommendations of this study are followed. Mohammadi et al. (2011) used DEA approach to analyze the energy efficiency of farmers and to identify the wasteful uses of energy in kiwifruit production in Iran. Results showed that 12.2% of input energy could be saved if the farmers follow the results recommended by this study. Also optimization of energy use improved the energy use efficiency, specific energy and net energy by 13.9%, 12.2% and 22.6%, respectively.

Based on the literature, there was no study on optimization of energy inputs for rice production in Iran. So, the aims of this research were to specify

energy use pattern for rice production, analyze the efficiencies of farmers, rank efficient and inefficient ones, and identify target energy requirement and wasteful uses of energy from different inputs for rice production in Mazandaran province of Iran.

#### Materials and methods

In this paper we used the DEA approach to analyze the data for optimizing the performance measure of each production unit or each rice farm and determining the most preferable ones. The data were collected using a face to face questionnaire form 72 rice farms in central region of Mazandaran province. Mazandaran Province is located in the between 35° 47' and 36°35' north latitude and 50° 34' east longitude. The surveyed region has a homogenous condition (climatic conditions, topography, soil type, etc.). This region is considered as a moderate region and most crops are irrigated. The average annual rainfall, temperature and elevation from sea level in the research area are 438.6mm (Anonymous, 2010).

The selection of Mazandaran region as the case study was basically due to its major contribution from rice production in Iran. A simple random sampling method was used to determine survey volume and the farms were chosen randomly from study region. The questionnaires included total inputs used in rice production from different sources such as human labor, machinery, diesel fuel, chemical fertilizer, biocide, irrigation water and seeds, and the yield weight, straw and husk as output. The input and output were calculated per hectare. For calculated technical efficiency all inputs and output must be weighted, therefore the inputs and output transformed to energy term by multiply their quantity per unit area by the coefficient of energy equivalent. Also each farmer called a Decision Making Unit (DMU). The results of study in the field of energy use and sensitivity analysis of energy inputs have been published by the author previously and the summarized results of the study are presented in Table 1 (Cherati et al. 2011). As can be seen, there was a wide variation in the quantity of energy inputs and output for rice production, indicating that there is a great scope for optimization of energy usage and improving the efficiency of energy consumption for rice production in the region.

In DEA, an inefficient DMU can be made efficient either by reducing the input levels while holding the outputs constant (input oriented), or symmetrically, by increasing the output levels while holding the inputs constant (output oriented) (Zhou et al., 2008).

TABLE 1					
Amounts of energy inputs and output	ut in rice product	tion			
Inputs (unit)	Quantity per unit area (ha)	Total energy equivalent (GJ ha <sup>-1</sup> )	SD(energy)	Max(energy)	Min(energy)
Input					
Fuel(L)	98.30	5.54	0.34	6.59	4.80
Machinery(h)	50.86	3.30	0.35	4.41	2.40
human labor (h)	762.70	1.76	0.19	2.15	1.30
Chemical fertilizers (kg)	282.53	8.12	1.29	11.30	4.80
Nitrogen fertilizer (N) (kg)	109.66	6.65	1.09	9.20	4.80
Phosphate fertilizer (P2O5) (kg)	61.05	0.73	0.32	1.19	0.00
Potassium fertilizer (K2O) (kg)	111.83	0.75	0.27	1.10	0.00
Toxins (kg)	4.40	0.84	0.20	1.21	0.15
Pesticides (kg)	1.36	0.14	0.02	0.16	0.10
Herbicide (kg)	2.09	0.50	0.11	0.60	0.00
Fungicides (kg)	0.95	0.21	0.16	0.45	0.00
Seed (kg)	68.06	1.16	0.07	1.36	0.95
Irrigation canal (m <sup>3</sup> )	9683.31	40.51	1.86	46.40	32.50
The total energy input (GJ)		61.23	3.37	71.37	49.90
Paddy (ton)	4.336	63.75	13.76	99.50	38.00
Straw (ton)	5.027	62.85	9.63	101.36	46.00
Husk (ton)	0.906	12.51	2.91	23.29	9.99
Total energy output (GJ)		139.11	24.24	209.39	94.20

The choice between input and output orientation depends on the unique characteristics of the set of DMUs under study. In this study there are three outputs, also multiple inputs are used. Also in the agricultural production, a farmer has more control over inputs rather than output levels, and as a recommendation, input conservation for given outputs seems to be more reasonable (Galanopoulos et al., 2006). Therefore in this study the input-oriented approach was used. DEA has two models including CCR and BCC models. The CCR DEA model assumes constant returns to scale. It measures the technical efficiency by which the DMUs are evaluated for their performance relative to other DMUs in a sample (Cooper et al., 2007). The BCC DEA model assumes variable returns to scale conditions. Therefore this model calculates the technical efficiencies of DMUs under variable return to scale conditions. It decomposes the technical efficiency into pure technical efficiency for management factors and scale efficiency for scale factors (Mousavi-Avval et al., 2011b).

In this study, in order to analyze the efficiencies of farmers the technical, pure technical and scale efficiency indices were investigated as follows:

#### **Technical efficiency**

The technical efficiency (TE) can be expressed generally by the ratio of sum of the weighted outputs to sum of weighted inputs. The value of technical efficiency varies between zero and one where a value of one implies that the DMU is a best performer located on the production frontier and has no reduction potential. Any value of TE lower than one indicates that the DMU uses inputs inefficiently (Mousavi-Avval et al., 2011b). Using standard notations, the technical efficiency can be expressed mathematically as the following relationship:

$$TE_{J} = \frac{u_{1}y_{1j} + u_{2}y_{2j} + \dots + u_{n}y_{nj}}{v_{1}x_{1j} + v_{2}x_{2j} + \dots + v_{m}x_{mj}} = \frac{\sum_{s=1}^{n} u_{r}y_{rj}}{\sum_{s=1}^{m} v_{s}x_{sj}}$$
(1)

Where  $u_r$  is the weight (energy coefficient) given to output n, y, is the amount of output n,  $v_s$  is the weight (energy coefficient) given to input n,  $x_s$  is the amount of input n, r is number of outputs (r=1, 2, ..., n), s is number of inputs (s=1, 2, ..., m) and j represents  $j_{th}$  of DMU<sub>s</sub> (j=1, 2, ..., k). To solve Eq. (1), Linear Program (LP) was used, which developed by Charnes et al. (1978):

$$Maximize \quad \theta = \sum_{r=1}^{n} u_r y_{rj} \tag{2}$$

Subjected to 
$$\sum_{r=1}^{n} u_r y_{rj} - \sum_{s=1}^{m} v_s x_{sj} \le 0$$
 (3)

$$\sum_{s=1}^{m} v_s x_{sj} = 1 \tag{4}$$

$$u_r \ge 0, v_s \ge 0$$
, and (i and j = 1; 2; 3;...; k) (5)

Where  $\theta$  is the technical efficiency and i represent  $i_{th}$  DMU (it will be fixed in Eqs. (2) and (4) while j increases in Eq. (3)). The above model is a linear programming model and is popularly known as the CCR DAE model, which assumes that there is no significant relationship between the scale of operations and efficiency (Avkiran, 2001). So, the large producers are just as efficient as small ones in converting inputs to outputs.

#### Pure technical efficiency

Pure technical efficiency is another model in DEA that is introduced by Banker et al., 1984. This model is called BCC and calculates the technical efficiency of DMUs under variable return to scale conditions. Pure technical efficiency could separate both technical and scale efficiencies. The main advantage of this model is that scale inefficient farms are only compared to efficient farms of a similar size (Bames, 2006). It can be expressed by Dual Linear Program (DLP) as follows (Mousavi-Avval et al., 2011b):

Maximize 
$$z = uv_i - u_i$$
 (6)

Subjected to  $vx_i = 1$  (7)

$$-vX + uY - u_o e \le 0 \tag{8}$$

$$v \ge 0, u \ge 0$$
 and  $u_0$  free in sign (9)

Where z and  $u_0$  are scalar and free in sign. u and v are output and inputs weight matrixes, and Y and X are corresponding output and input matrixes, respectively. The letters  $x_i$  and  $y_i$  refer to the inputs and outputs of  $i_{th}$  DMU.

#### Scale efficiency

Scale efficiency shows the effect of DMU size on efficiency of system. Simply, it indicates that some part of inefficiency refers to inappropriate size of DMU, and if DMU moved toward the best size the overall efficiency (technical) can be improved at the same level of technologies (inputs) (Nassiri and Singh, 2009). If a DMU is fully efficient in both the technical and pure technical efficiency scores, it is operating at the most productive scale size. If a DMU has the full pure technical efficiency score, but a low technical efficiency score, then it is locally efficient but not globally efficient due to its scale size. Thus, it is reasonable to characterize the scale efficiency of a DMU by the ratio of the two scores (SarIca and Or, 2007). The relationship among the scale efficiency, technical efficiency and pure technical efficiency can be expressed as follows (Chauhan et al., 2006):

#### **Cross-efficiency**

The results of standard DEA models separate the DMUs into two sets of efficient and inefficient ones; so many units are calculated as efficient and cannot to be ranked. Also in DEA because of the unrestricted weight flexibility problem, it is possible that some of the efficient units are better overall performers than the other efficient

ones (Adler et al., 2002). To overcome this problem and achieve a complete ranking of efficient farmers, the cross-efficiency ranking method was used which was developed by Sexton et al. (1986). In this method the results of all the DEA efficiency scores can be aggregated in a matrix, called cross-efficiency matrix. In this matrix  $E_{ij}$ , the element in the  $i_{th}$  row and  $j_{th}$  column, represents the efficiency score for the  $j_{th}$  farmer calculated using the optimal weights of the ith farmer which is computed by the CCR model. In general, the efficient farmers can be ranked according to their average cross efficiency score which can be achieved by averaging each column of cross-efficiency matrix and it is a matter of judgment for analysis to select the highly ranked farmers as truly efficient ones; so, a farmer with a high average cross efficiency score is a good performer (Angulo-Meza and Lins, 2002; Chauhan et al., 2006; Zhang et al., 2009).

In the analysis of efficient and inefficient DMUs the energy saving target ratio (ESTR) index can be used which represents the inefficiency level for each DMUs with respect to energy use. The formula is as follows (Hu and Kao, 2007):

$$ESTR_{j} = \frac{(Energy Saving Target)_{j}}{(Actual Energy Input)_{j}}$$
(11)

Where energy saving target is the total reducing amount of input that could be saved without decreasing output level and j represents  $j_{th}$  DMU. The minimal value of energy saving target is 0, so the value of ESTR will be between zero and unity. A zero ESTR value indicates the DMU on the frontier such as efficient ones; on the other hand for inefficient DMUs, the value of ESTR is larger than zero, which means that energy could be saved. A higher ESTR value implies higher energy inefficiency and a higher energy saving amount (Hu and Kao, 2007).

In order to calculate the efficiencies of farmers and discriminate between efficient and inefficient ones, the Microsoft Excel spread sheet and Frontier Analyst software were used.

#### Result and discussion

#### **Efficiency estimation of farmers**

The results of BCC and CCR DEA models are illustrated in Table 2. The results revealed that many of the farms in the sample are operating at near or full efficiency for all the model specifications, so that from the total of 72 farmers considered for the analysis, 16 farmers (22.2%) had the pure technical efficiency score of 1. Moreover, from the pure technically efficient farmers 7 farmers (9.7%) had the technical efficiency score of 1. From efficient farmers 8 ones had a scale efficiency of unity. From efficient farmers 7 were the fully efficient farmers in both the technical and pure technical efficiency scores, indicating that they were globally efficient and operated at the most productive scale size; however, the remainder of 65 pure technically efficient farmers were only locally efficient ones; it was due to their disadvantageous conditions of scale size. From inefficient farmers 3 and 53 have their technical and pure technical efficiency scores in the 0.9–0.99 range. It means that the farmers should be able to produce the same level of output using their efficiency score of its current level of energy input when compared to its benchmark which is constructed from the best performers with similar characteristics. These results are similar to the results of Fraser and Cordina (1999) and Mohammadi et al. (2011).

The summarized statistics for the three estimated measures of efficiency are presented in Table 2. The results revealed that the average values of technical, pure technical and scale efficiency scores were 0.78, 0.95 and 0.82, respectively. Moreover the technical efficiency varied from 0.64 to 1, with the standard deviation of 0.1, which was the highest variation between those of pure technical and scale efficiencies. The wide variation in the technical efficiency of farmers implies that all the farmers were not fully aware of the right production techniques or did not apply them at the proper time in the optimum quantity (Mohammadi et al., 2011). Mohammadi et al. (2011) applied DEA technique to determine the efficiencies of farmers in kiwifruit production in Iran. They reported that the technical, pure technical and scale efficiency scores were 0.94, 0.99 and 0.95, respectively. In another study, the efficiency of soybean production was analyzed and these efficiency indices were reported 0.85, 0.92 and 0.93, respectively (Mousavi–Avval et al., 2011a).

No.	Technical efficiency	Pure technical efficiency	scale efficiency	Farmer No.	Technical efficiency	Pure technical efficiency	scale efficiency
1	0.72	0.94	0.77	37	0.68	0.90	0.75
2	1.00	1.00	1.00	38	0.69	0.91	0.76
3	1.00	1.00	1.00	39	0.69	0.90	0.77
4	0.86	0.98	0.88	40	0.77	0.90	0.86
5	0.99	1.00	0.99	41	0.80	1.00	0.80
6	1.00	1.00	1.00	42	0.78	0.94	0.83
7	0.69	0.97	0.70	43	0.69	1.00	0.69
8	1.00	1.00	1.00	44	0.73	1.00	0.73
9	0.74	0.97	0.76	45	0.66	0.93	0.71
10	1.00	1.00	1.00	46	0.75	0.95	0.79
11	1.00	1.00	1.00	47	0.79	0.97	0.81
12	1.00	1.00	1.00	48	0.77	0.96	0.81
13	0.81	0.96	0.85	49	0.74	0.97	0.76
14	0.88	0.99	0.89	50	0.82	0.98	0.84
15	0.77	0.93	0.83	51	0.81	0.92	0.89
16	0.79	1.00	0.79	52	0.80	0.97	0.83
17	0.98	1.00	0.98	53	0.74	0.95	0.78
18	0.80	0.96	0.83	54	0.63	0.94	0.67
19	0.93	0.93	1.00	55	0.68	0.95	0.71
20	0.86	1.00	0.86	56	0.71	0.92	0.76
21	0.85	0.96	0.88	57	0.73	0.88	0.82
22	0.79	0.98	0.80	58	0.73	0.90	0.80
23	0.88	0.96	0.91	59	0.76	0.92	0.83
24	0.80	1.00	0.80	60	0.77	0.92	0.84
25	0.81	0.93	0.87	61	0.72	0.97	0.74
26	0.80	0.91	0.88	62	0.72	0.91	0.79
27	0.70	0.99	0.71	63	0.75	0.91	0.83
28	0.82	0.95	0.86	64	0.75	0.91	0.82
29	0.75	0.93	0.81	65	0.74	0.89	0.83
30	0.76	0.90	0.85	66	0.66	0.92	0.72
31	0.84	0.99	0.85	67	0.69	0.94	0.74
32	0.72	0.97	0.74	68	0.78	0.92	0.85
33	0.69	1.00	0.69	69	0.72	0.89	0.81
34	0.61	0.95	0.64	70	0.73	0.90	0.80
35	0.64	0.93	0.69	71	0.76	0.91	0.84
36	0.66	0.92	0.71	72	0.76	0.90	0.84
		Technical effic	ciency	Pure technical e	efficiency	Scal effch	ancy
Avrage	<del></del>	0.78		0.95		0.82	
SD:		0.10		0.04		0.09	

#### Ranking the efficient farmers

In this study efficient farmers were ranked according to their average cross efficiency scores. For this purpose, the CCR model (2) was used to calculate the cross efficiency scores in each cell of cross efficiency matrix. The average and standard deviation of cross efficiency scores for 6 truly most efficient farmers are shown in Table 3. The results revealed that farmers no. 10, 12 and 5 with the average cross efficiency scores of 0.33, 0.32 and 0.32 had the highest average cross efficiency scores, respectively; therefore, these farms can be used as terms of benchmarking and establishing the best practice management.

TABLE 3	
Average cross efficiency (ACE) score for	6 truly most efficient farmers based on the CCR model.
Farmer No.	ACE
10	0.33
12	0.32
3	0.31
5	0.32
6	0.30
8	0.31

#### Optimum energy requirement and saving energy

The optimum energy requirement and saving energy of various farm inputs for rice production are based on the results of BCC model are given in Table 4. The results revealed that the total optimum energy requirement for rice production was 56.66 GJ ha<sup>-1</sup> Also the percentage of total saving energy in optimum requirement over total actual use of energy was calculated as 7.47%, indicating that by following the recommendations resulted from this study, on average, about 4.57GJ ha<sup>-1</sup> of total input energy could be saved. As mentioned previously, in the agricultural production, a farmer has more control over inputs rather than output levels. Also in this study there was only one output and the input-oriented approach was used. Therefore, this amount of energy could be saved, while holding the constant output level of rice yield.

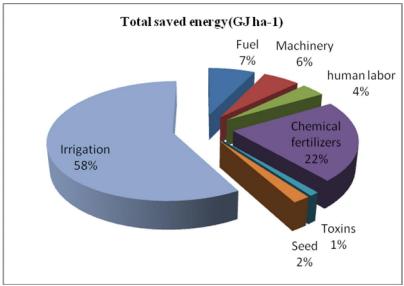
Singh et al. (2004) concluded that the existing level of productivity in wheat production in Punjab could be achieved by 22.3%, 20.8%, 9.8%, 7.1% and 15.9% reducing the energy input over the actual energy input, in zones 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5, respectively. In another study, Mohammadi et al. (2011) reported that on an average, about 12% of the total input energy for kiwifruit production in Iran could be saved.

TABLE 4 Optimum energy requirement and saving energy for rice production							
Input	Optimum energy requirement (GJ ha <sup>-1</sup> )	Saving energy (GJ ha <sup>-1</sup> )	ESTR (%)				
Fuel	5.21	0.33	5.87				
Machinery	3.04	0.26	8.01				
human labor	1.59	0.17	9.90				
Chemical fertilizers	7.11	1.01	12.40				
Toxins	0.79	0.05	6.47				
Seed	1.07	0.09	7.85				
Irrigation	37.85	2.66	6.56				
Total energy	56.66	4.57	7.47				

In Fig. 1 the shares of the various sources from total input energy saving are presented. Results revealed that the highest contribution to the total saving energy was 58 % for Irrigation followed by chemical fertilizers (22 %) and diesel fuel (7 %) energy inputs, respectively. Moreover the shares of machinery, human labor, Seed and Toxins energy inputs were relatively low, indicating that they have been used in the right proportions by almost all the farmers. Chauhan et al. (2006) reported that the contribution of fertilizer and diesel fuel energy inputs from total saving energy in paddy production were 33% and 24%, respectively. Mousavi-Avval et al. (2011a) reported that the contribution of electricity and seed energy inputs by 78.1% and 0.05% from total energy saving in soybean production were the highest and lowest, respectively.

In the region, the high contribution of saving irrigation energy resulted from the low efficiency of ancient irrigation methods, which led to waste a lot of water and energy in the form energy. The high contribution of

fertilizer energy inputs showed that all of farmers were not fully aware of proper time and quantity of fertilizers usage. Also nitrogen fertilizers were the main fertilizer in rice production which applied improperly in the rejoin. So, providing information to farmers and changing their incorrect behaviors can prevent loss of energy and also their harmful effects on environment. The high percent saving in diesel fuel shows the mismanagement in machinery employment in field operations.



**FIGURE** 1. Distribution of saving energy from different sources for rice production.

#### Improvements of energy indices

The improvements of energy indices for rice production are presented in Table 5. Energy use efficiency was calculated as 2.27 and 2.46, in present and target use of energy, respectively, showing an improvement of 7.46 %. Also, energy productivity and net energy in target conditions were found to be 0.066 kg MJ<sup>-1</sup> and 82.45 GJ ha<sup>-1</sup>, respectively. The distribution of inputs used in the production of rice according to the direct, indirect, renewable and non-renewable energy groups are also given in Table 5. It is evident that by optimization of energy input, the shares of Indirect and non-renewable energy with respect to total energy input increased and also the shares of direct and renewable energy forms symmetrically decreased.

Mohammadi et al. (2011) reported by optimization of energy inputs in kiwifruit production the energy use efficiency by increasing of 13.86% can be improved to the value of 1.75. In another study, energy use efficiency for apple production was calculated as 1.16 and 1.31, in present and target use of energy, respectively, showing an improvement of 12.93% (Mousavi-Avval et al., 2011b).

TABLE 5 Improvement of energy indices for Rice production.							
Items	Unit	Present quantity	Optimum quantity	Difference(%)			
Energy use efficiency	ratio	2.27	2.46	7.46			
Energy productivity	Kg MJ <sup>-1</sup>	0.061	0.066	7.46			
Net energy gain	GJ ha <sup>-1</sup>	77.88	82.45	5.54			
Direct energy	GJ ha <sup>-1</sup>	7.3 (11.92%)	6.8 (12.00%)	-7.35			
Indirect energy	GJ ha <sup>-1</sup>	53.93 (88.08%)	49.86 (88.00%)	-8.16			
Renewable energy	GJ ha <sup>-1</sup>	2.92 (4.77%)	2.66 (4.69%)	-9.77			
Non-renewable energy	GJ ha <sup>-1</sup>	58.31 (95.23%)	54 (95.31%)	-7.98			
Total energy input	GJ ha <sup>-1</sup>	61.23 (100%)	56.66 (100%)	-8.07			

#### Setting realistic input levels for inefficient farmers

In Table 6 the pure technical efficiency (PTE), actual energy use and optimum energy requirement from different energy sources for individual inefficient farmers are shown. Also their average and standard deviation values are presented. Using this information, it is possible to advise a producer regarding the better operating practices by following his/her target energy requirement from different inputs to reduce the input energy levels to the target values while achieving the output level presently achieved by him. So, dissemination of these results will help to improve efficiency of farmers for rice production in the surveyed region. In the last column of Table 6 the ESTR percentage for 56 inefficient farmers are presented. As it can be seen, for inefficient farmers, ESTR ranges from under 1% (farmers no. 14, 31) to 15.99% (farmer no. 56), with the average of 9.47 %, indicating that between inefficient farmers, nos. 14, 31 were the best, and farmer no. 56 was the most inefficient one.

DMU	PTE		ergy use (GJ ha <sup>-1</sup> )						Optimum	energy requiremen	nt (GJ ha <sup>-1</sup> )					ESTR (%)
	-	Labour	Machinery	fuel	Fertilizer	Toxins	irrigation	seed	Labour	Machinery	fuel	Fertilizer	Toxins	irrigation	seed	+ ` _
1	0.94	2.15	2.79	5.21	8.01	1.07	40.50	1.36	1.51	2.56	4.87	6.35	1.00	34.19	1.02	15.70
4	0.98	1.55	2.79	5.29	7.91	1.07	40.50	1.28	1.51	2.72	5.09	7.25	1.04	36.02	1.07	9.42
7	0.97	2.15	3.05	5.21	7.44	0.55	38.95	1.19	1.77	2.73	5.08	6.06	0.54	37.96	1.06	5.71
9	0.97	1.45	3.89	5.69	7.14	0.74	40.95	1.28	1.40	3.07	5.25	6.55	0.72	39.67	1.11	5.51
13	0.96	2.02	3.43	5.81	9.07	0.66	45.40	1.02	1.69	3.22	5.59	6.68	0.63	41.10	0.98	11.16
14	0.99	1.75	3.30	5.50	7.65	0.59	40.50	1.11	1.69	3.15	5.47	7.60	0.59	40.25	1.08	0.94
15	0.93	1.60	3.82	5.60	7.69	1.21	40.50	1.11	1.49	2.92	5.23	7.18	0.94	37.28	1.03	8.87
18	0.96	2.02	3.37	5.91	9.07	0.66	46.40	1.02	1.69	3.24	5.61	6.74	0.63	41.29	0.95	12.13
19	0.93	2.00	4.28	6.59	10.94	1.07	45.40	1.11	1.60	3.89	5.69	9.06	0.83	42.16	1.03	9.99
21	0.96	2.00	3.02	5.31	7.64	0.91	41.00	1.16	1.81	2.90	5.11	7.35	0.76	38.82	1.08	5.26
22	0.98	1.98	3.56	5.21	7.72	0.75	42.00	1.11	1.65	3.22	5.12	7.46	0.74	38.59	1.02	7.27
23	0.96	1.85	3.24	5.79	8.15	0.75	40.60	1.14	1.59	3.11	5.30	7.48	0.72	39.00	1.06	5.30
25	0.93	1.92	3.37	5.61	7.86	1.03	40.80	1.17	1.60	3.14	5.23	7.33	0.85	38.05	1.03	7.33
26	0.91	1.70	3.76	5.80	9.36	1.07	40.70	1.19	1.49	3.42	5.23	8.53	0.98	37.09	1.11	9.01
27	0.99	2.00	3.05	4.99	6.90	0.85	39.00	1.16	1.62	2.67	4.93	6.12	0.84	35.49	0.97	9.16
28	0.95	1.80	3.24	5.60	7.80	0.75	39.60	1.19	1.52	3.08	5.26	7.28	0.71	37.70	1.09	5.57
29	0.93	1.66	3.18	5.65	7.65	0.71	40.70	1.24	1.54	2.95	5.18	6.43	0.66	37.72	1.08	8.60
30	0.90	1.85	3.30	6.21	8.09	1.07	40.20	1.14	1.46	2.98	5.18	7.24	0.97	36.27	1.03	10.88
31	0.99	1.72	3.18	5.40	7.72	0.51	40.50	1.17	1.71	3.09	5.36	7.65	0.51	40.20	1.11	0.95
32	0.97	1.68	2.98	5.11	7.60	0.92	40.00	1.17	1.59	2.70	4.93	6.31	0.89	35.30	1.03	11.28
34	0.95	1.45	3.18	5.22	7.02	0.93	40.00	1.11	1.38	2.68	4.98	6.19	0.89	34.03	1.06	13.07
35	0.93	1.50	3.18	5.41	7.70	0.96	40.00	1.16	1.39	2.79	5.00	6.47	0.89	34.74	1.07	12.62
36	0.92	1.60	3.24	5.51	7.80	0.95	40.50	1.11	1.48	2.76	5.09	6.39	0.88	35.31	1.03	12.80
37	0.90	1.67	3.18	5.55	7.78	0.95	40.60	1.16	1.51	2.80	5.01	6.50	0.86	34.97	1.05	13.45
38	0.91	1.69	3.24	5.59	7.83	0.75	40.70	1.19	1.54	2.94	5.08	6.72	0.68	36.88	1.08	9.95
39	0.90	1.70	3.30	5.60	7.80	0.95	40.79	1.16	1.53	2.90	5.05	6.72	0.86	35.63	1.05	12.33
40	0.90	1.89	3.50	5.83	11.00	0.95	41.00	1.28	1.47	3.14	5.21	7.73	0.85	36.84	1.09	13.93
42	0.94	1.97	3.24	5.38	7.81	0.95	40.50	1.19	1.61	3.05	5.07	7.34	0.89	36.79	1.05	8.58
45	0.93	1.62	3.37	5.39	7.64	0.93	40.30	1.19	1.50	2.89	4.99	7.07	0.86	36.15	1.07	9.78
46	0.95	1.70	3.24	5.29	7.70	0.88	40.45	1.16	1.62		5.04	6.98	0.84	36.82	1.04	8.42
47 48	0.97	1.81	3.30 2.98	5.45	6.79 7.37	0.63	40.49 40.50	1.16	1.71	2.96 2.85	5.31 4.99	6.61	0.61	39.17 36.07	1.04	3.72 9.70
48	0.96	1.71	3.24	5.20	7.70	0.63	40.50	1.19	1.64	3.00	5.15	7.13	0.86	39.37	1.04	3.74
50	0.97	1.71	3.18	5.35	7.70	0.66	40.50	1.10	1.63	3.07	5.13	7.13	0.61	39.58	1.09	3.74
51	0.98	1.71	3.50	5.89	10.66	0.00	40.30	1.19	1.03	3.21	5.24	8.02	0.87	37.51	1.09	11.37
52	0.92	1.71	3.89	6.40	11.30	1.07	41.00	1.19	1.49	3.51	5.30	8.08	0.86	39.78	1.10	9.56
53	0.97	1.77	3.18	5.29	8.16	0.90	40.60	1.16	1.62	2.89	5.01	6.72	0.85	36.29	1.04	10.87
54	0.94	1.83	3.43	5.32	7.37	0.63	40.00	1.11	1.72	2.71	5.00	5.78	0.59	37.52	1.04	9.08
55	0.94	1.79	3.18	5.29	7.66	0.63	40.10	1.11	1.72	2.86	5.04	6.49	0.60	38.47	1.04	6.47
56	0.92	1.88	3.30	5.39	10.65	1.07	40.50	1.19	1.53	2.83	4.98	7.03	0.00	35.35	1.04	15.99
57	0.88	1.82	3.37	5.75	9.56	1.07	40.50	1.19	1.50	2.98	5.08	7.03	0.94	35.76	1.05	13.71
58	0.90	1.80	3.50	5.85	10.06	0.75	40.52	1.19	1.47	3.16	5.28	6.92	0.68	36.59	1.07	13.35
59	0.90	1.77	3.37	5.70	7.37	0.75	40.52	1.19	1.54	2.95	5.23	6.76	0.87	37.26	1.00	8.72
60	0.92	1.87	3.43	5.75	7.90	0.90	40.65	1.11	1.52	3.06	5.29	6.91	0.83	37.39	1.02	9.07
61	0.92	1.80	3.24	5.30	7.67	0.63	40.50	1.19	1.65	2.96	5.11	6.92	0.61	39.08	1.02	4.84
62	0.91	1.83	3.37	5.65	10.07	0.75	40.60	1.19	1.61	3.05	5.12	6.67	0.68	36.78	1.07	13.36
63	0.91	1.79	3.24	5.69	7.96	0.75	40.65	1.19	1.56	2.96	5.17	6.69	0.68	37.08	1.08	9.87
64	0.91	1.80	3.30	5.70	7.96	0.75	40.50	1.19	1.52	3.01	5.20	6.85	0.68	36.93	1.09	9.67
65	0.89	1.82	3.37	5.79	7.96	1.07	40.60	1.16	1.48	2.95	5.17	7.11	0.96	36.26	1.03	11.02
66	0.92	1.80	3.24	5.40	7.96	0.95	40.10	1.11	1.59	2.66	4.97	6.15	0.87	35.52	1.02	12.85
67	0.94	1.77	3.24	5.45	7.96	0.63	40.23	1.16	1.67	2.88	5.13	6.46	0.59	37.85	1.07	7.93
68	0.92	1.82	3.43	5.89	7.96	0.90	40.65	1.12	1.48	3.12	5.32	7.05	0.83	37.33	1.03	9.15
69	0.89	1.80	3.43	5.80	7.96	1.07	40.50	1.19	1.47	2.93	5.14	7.06	0.95	35.92	1.04	11.72
70	0.90	1.83	3.43	5.80	9.17	0.75	40.60	1.19	1.49	3.10	5.24	6.83	0.68	36.68	1.08	12.22
71	0.91	1.79	3.50	5.89	8.24	0.75	40.90	1.19	1.47	3.19	5.31	7.20	0.68	37.29	1.09	9.69
72	0.90	1.88	3.56	6.00	11.00	0.95	41.00	1.19	1.48	3.19	5.23	7.59	0.85	36.76	1.07	14.35
ave:	0.94	1.79	3.33	5.58	8.28	0.85	40.78	1.17	1.56	3.00	5.17	6.98	0.78	37.35	1.05	9.47
SD:	0.03	0.15	0.26	0.31	1.14	0.17	1.28	0.06	0.10	0.23	0.17	0.61	0.14	1.79	0.03	3.45

#### Conclusion

In this study, the non-parametric method of DEA was used to analyze the efficiencies of rice producers in Mazandaran province of Iran in energy points of view. Based on the results of the investigations, the following conclusions were drawn:

- 1. From the total of 72 farmers considered for the analysis, 9.7 % and 22.2 % were found to be technically and pure technically efficient, respectively.
- 2. The average values of technical, pure technical and scale efficiency scores of farmers were found to be 0.78, 0.95 and 0.82, respectively.
- 3. The energy saving target ratio for rice production was calculated as 7.47 %, indicating that

by following the recommendations resulted from this study, about 4.57 GJ ha<sup>-1</sup> of total input energy could be saved while holding the constant level of rice yield.

- 4. The irrigation energy had the highest potential for improvement by 58%, followed by chemical fertilizer and diesel fuel energy inputs.
- 5. The comparative results of energy indices revealed that by optimization of energy consumption, energy efficiency, energy productivity and net energy with respect to the actual energy use can be increased by 7.46 %, 7.46 % and 5.54 %, respectively.
- 6. It is suggested that new policies, such as providing information to farmers and using of modern methods of irrigation, are to be implemented to reduce the negative effects of energy inputs such as plant, soil and climate pollution.

#### References

- 1. Adler N, Friedman L, Sinuany-Stern Z. Review of ranking methods in the data envelopment analysis context. Eur J Oper Res 2002;140(2):249–65.
- 2. Angulo-Meza L, Lins MPE. Review of methods for increasing discrimination in Data Envelopment Analysis. Ann Oper Res 2002;116(1–4):225–42.
- 3. Anonymous. Annual agricultural statistics. Ministry of Jihad-e-Agriculture of Iran. http://www.maj.ir2010.
- 4. Avkiran NK. Investigating technical and scale efficiencies of Australian universities through data envelopment analysis. Socioecon Plann Sci 2001;35(1):57–80.
- 5. Bames A. Does multi-functionality affect technical efficiency? A non-parametric analysis of the Scottish dairy industry. J Environ Manage 2006;80(4):287–94.
- 6. Banker R, Charnes A, Cooper W. Some models for estimating technical and scale inefficiencies in data envelopment analysis. Manage Sci 1984;30:1078–92.
- 7. Boehmel C, Lewandowski I, Claupein W. Comparing annual and perennial energy cropping systems with different management intensities. Agric Syst 2008;96(1–3):224–36.
- 8. Canakci A, Akinci I. Energy use pattern analyses of greenhouse vegetable production. Energy 2006;31:1243–56.
- 9. Cetin B, Vardar A. An economic analysis of energy requirements and input costs for tomato production in Turkey. Renew Energy 2008;33:428–33.
- 10. Cherati, F.E., H. Bahrami and A .Asakereh,. Energy survey of mechanized and traditional rice production system in Mazandaran Province

- of Iran. Afr. J. Agric. Res., 2011; 6(11), pp. 2565-2570.
- 11. Charnes A, Cooper WW, Rhodes E. Measuring the efficiency of decision-making units. Eur J Oper Res 1978;2:429–44.
- 12. Chauhan NS,Mohapatra PKJ, Pandey KP. Improving energy productivity in paddy production through benchmarking—an application of data envelopment analysis. Energy Convers Manage 2006;47(9–10):1063–85
- 13. Cooper W, Seiford LM, Tone K. Data envelopment analysis: a comprehensive text with models, applications, references and DEA-solver software. New York: Springer; 2007.
- 14. Erdal G, Esengun K, Erdal H, Gunduz O. Energy use and economical analysis of sugar beet production in Tokat province of Turkey. Energy 2007;32(1):35–41.
- Fraser I, Cordina D. An application of Data Envelopment Analysis to irrigated dairy farms in Northern Victoria, Australia. Agric Syst 1999;59(3):267–82.
- Galanopoulos K, Aggelopoulos S, Kamenidou I, Mattas K. Assessing the effects of managerial and production practices on the efficiency of commercial pig farming. Agric Syst 2006;88(2– 3):125–41.
- 17. Ginigaddara,G.A.S. and S.L. Ranamukhaarachchi. Effect of conventional, SRI and modified water management on growth, yield and water productivity of direct-seeded and transplanted rice in central Thailand. Aust. J. Crop Sci., 2009; 3(5): 278-286.
- 18. Hu JL, Kao CH. Efficient energy-saving targets for APEC economies. Energy Policy 2007;35(1):373–82.
- IRRI, A Handbook of Weed Control in Rice, International Rice Research Institute. Manila, Philippines, 2010.pp: 113.
- 20. Manes GS, Singh S. Optimal use of energy inputs for rice cultivation in Punjab. J Res PAU 2003;40(3-4):405.
- 21. Mikkola JH, Ahokas J. Indirect energy input of agricultural machinery in bioenergy production. Renew Energy 2010;35:23–8.
- 22. Mobtaker HG, Keyhani A, Mohammadi A, Rafiee S, AkramA. Sensitivity analysis of energy inputs for barley production in Hamedan Province of Iran. Agric Ecosyst Environ 2010;137(3–4):367–72.
- 23. Mohammadi A, Omid M. Economical analysis and relation between energy inputs and yield of greenhouse cucumber production in Iran. Appl Energy 2010;87(1):191–6.

- 24. Mohammadi A, Rafiee SH, Mohtasebi SS, Mousavi-Avval SH, Rafiee H. Energy efficiency improvement and input cost saving in kiwifruit production using Data Envelopment Analysis approach. Renew Energy 2011;36:2573–9.
- Mousavi-Avval SH, Rafiee S, Jafari A,Mohammadi A. Optimization of energy consumption for soybean production using Data Envelopment Analysis (DEA) approach. Appl Energy 2011a;35:2156–64.
- Mousavi-Avval SH, Rafiee S, Mohammadi A. Optimization of energy consumption and input costs for apple production in Iran using data envelopment analysis. Energy 2011b;36:909–16.
- 27. Nassiri SM, Singh S. Study on energy use efficiency for paddy crop using data envelopment analysis (DEA) technique. Appl Energy 2009;86(7):1320–5.
- 28. Ozkan B, Fert C, Karadeniz CF. Energy and cost analysis for greenhouse and open-field grape production. Energy 2007;32(8):1500–4.
- 29. Rafiee S, Mousavi-Avval SH, Mohammadi A. Modeling and sensitivity analysis of energy inputs for apple production in Iran. Energy 2010;35:3301–6.
- 30. Reddy AR, Sen C. Technical inefficiency in rice production and its relationship with farm-specific socio-economic characteristics. Ind J Agric Eco 2004;59(2):259.
- 31. Samadi-Maybodi, A. and E. Atashbozorg,. Quantitative and qualitative studies of silica in different rice samples grown in north of Iran using UV-vis, XRD and IR spectroscopy techniques. Talanta, 2006; 70: 756-760.
- 32. SarIca K, Or I. Efficiency assessment of Turkish power plants using data envelopment analysis. Energy 2007;32(8):1484–99.
- 33. Sexton TR, Silkman RH, Hogan AJ. Data envelopment analysis: critique and extensions. In: Silkman RH, editor. Measuring efficiency: an assessment of data envelopment analysis. San Francisco: Jossey-Bass; 1986.

- 34. Sinha, S.K. and J. Talati, Productivity impacts of the system of rice intensification (SRI): A case study in West Bengal, India. Agr. Water Manag 2007; 87: 55-60.
- 35. Singh S, Singh MP, Bakhshi P. Unit energy consumption for paddy—wheat rotation. Energy Convers Manage 1990;30:121.
- 36. Singh S, Singh S, Mittal JP, Pannu CJS, Bhangoo BS. Energy inputs and crop yield relationships for rice in Punjab. Energy The Int J 1994;19:1061.
- 37. Singh S, Mittal JP, Verma SR. Energy requirements for production of major crops in India. Agric Mech Asia Afr Latin Am 1997;28(4):13.
- 38. Singh G. Optimization of energy inputs for crop production in Punjab. Unpublished Ph.D. dissertation. Ludhiana, India: Department of Farm Power and Machinery, College of Agril. Engg. Punjab Agricultural University; 2001.
- 39. Singh G, Singh S, Singh J. Optimization of energy inputs for wheat crop in Punjab. Energy Convers Manage 2004;45:453–65.
- 40. Unakitan G, Hurma H, Yilmaz F. An analysis of energy use efficiency of canola production in Turkey. Energy 2010;35:3623–7.
- 41. Zangeneh M, Omid M, Akram A. A comparative study on energy use and cost analysis of potato production under different farming technologies in Hamadan province of Iran. Energy 2010;35:2927–33.
- 42. Zhang X, Huang GH, Lin Q, Yu H. Petroleum-contaminated groundwater remediation systems design: a data envelopment analysis based approach. Expert Syst Appl 2009;36(3, Part 1):5666–72.
- 43. Zhou P, Ang BW, Poh KL. A survey of data envelopment analysis in energy an environmental studies. Eur J Oper Res 2008;189:1-18.

6/17/2013

#### Studies On The Microbial Flora Found In The Intestine Of Heteroclarias Specie

Okadinya. M.O, Ugoh, S.C And Solomon, J.R.

Department Of Biological Sciences, Faculty Of Science, University Of Abuja, Nigeria.

**ABSTRACT:** Studies of the microbial flora of Heteroclarias fish was carried out 48hrs prior in which the fish was starved. The enumeration of bacterial found in the intestine of Heteroclarias fish was done through serial dilution and agar plating techniques. A nutrient agar at 45c and O.1ml of the suspension was poured into a petridish. The isolation was done using various biochemical tests. The various micro organisms which were isolated were mainly, Escherichia coli, pseudomonas fluorescence's cereus, staphyloccus aureus, klebsiella aerugenes, salmonella, entritidis, bascillus cereus, proteus vulgaris and various fungal species. The bacteria gotten from this isolation were mostly gram negative with E. coli having the highest number of growth often occurred in concentration ranging between 10 and 10 colony forming unit per ml of the fish content.

[Okadinya. M.O, Ugoh, S.C And Solomon, J.R. **Studies On The Microbial Flora Found In The Intestine Of** *Heteroclarias* **Specie.** *Academia Arena* 2013;5(6):41-51] (ISSN 1553-992X). <a href="http://www.sciencepub.net/academia">http://www.sciencepub.net/academia</a>. 4

**KEY WORDS:** Heteroclarias, Escherichia coli, pseudomonas fluorescence's cereus and entritidis, bascillus cereus

#### INTRODUCTION

In Africa, especially in Nigeria, the species mostly cultured are *Clarias gariepinus*, *heterobranchus* species and their hybrids. The reasons for their culture are based on their fast growth rate, diseases resistance, high stocking density, aerial respiration, high speed conversion efficiency among others. Aquaculture in Nigeria is in the developing stage, because it has not been able to meet the demand and supply of the ever –increasing population, catfish are cultured conveniently under mono and polyculture systems (Reich, 1975).

However, with the intensification of tank system where fish culturists rely solely on artificial feed as the only food resource of closely related species of the same family and of the same feeding habits, this type of system, there is the culture of only one single specie known as monoculture. Most cat fish culturists in Africa especially in Nigeria have practiced any of these culture systems without knowing the best culture for their fish. These farmers believe that culturing different cat fish together or separately have little or no effect in their growth performance as well as their survival. The major preliminary condition in setting up a polycultured system is to identify an ideal stocking ratio which takes into consideration the intensity of species interaction and utilization of different ecological strata's and a better valorization of the water body (Billad, 1980).

In a catfish/tilapia polyculture system, stocking tilapia at densities equal to or greater than 25% of the weight of stocked catfishes (Hash, 1980). The positive effect of polyculture with predatory fish species in an additional source of food which is later

represented by tilapia larvae (Pompa, 1978). Different combination of fish species in polycultured systems have been practiced throughout the world (Elmendo, 1980). Studies on the growth performance and survival of fish especially salmon species under the mono and duo culture systems have been reported. Salmon species in duo culture system had better growth than those in monoculture system. (Mork, 1982; Nor, dvedt and Holm 1991) reported that salmon species in duo culture system had better than those in the mono culture system.

However, salmon reared in duo culture did not grow significantly better than those reared in monoculture, no difference in growth increments between monoculture of one species and polyculture of several species within the same period (Shepherd. 1988).however one species might affect the environment to prove the growth condition of the other species, these increased stocking density will increase inter-specific and intra-specific competition and fish production will slow down the body weight at harvest of catfish (160-190g) was twice those of tilapia (50-70g) range (Alan, 1994). Experimental studies on the hybridization of Heterobranchus longifilis and Clarias gariepinus, which lead to hybrids with valuable characteristics for culture (Heent and Lublenkhot, 1985).

Hybrid morphology was intermediate to that of the parents and had a faster growth and survival (Legendre et al., 1991). Intra-specific hybridization of fish has been considered to combine valuable traits from two or more species to obtain hybrids that exceed both parents' species (Pan and Zeng, 1986).

The Nile Tilapia (Oreochromis Niloticus) generally is good for polyculture traits because it

does not affect the growth and production of most of the species (Cruz, 1980). Observation shows that, the highest stocking ratio (clarias manganese/ tilapia were 1:4 and 1:8). Had a higher but lower individual weight gains (sunset and Bayne, 1978). The production in a tilapia monoculture system was lower than in polyculture with macrobrachium (Guerrero et al., 1977). An individual species could be used as a predator for recruitment control under different stocking ratio (Bedaroi, 1985). The aim of catfish/tilapia polyculture system is to increases productivity based on the availability of tilapia larvae (Stainer, 1979). Most of the commercial feed millers in Nigeria are poultry based, fish feed production remain negligible and often incidental through the methodology of producing fish feed is not quite different from poultry; it consumes more time and money than poultry. Many of the machines required are not even available within the country and where they can be improved local fabrication, the funds become a problem to the medium scale farmers. Fish body is mainly protein especially animal sources (fish meal) is always canvassed (Lovell, 1980).

#### LITERATURE REVIEW

According to Fagbenro and Davis (2003) although only two species of anaerobic bacteria, namely *Clostridium botulinum* and *eubacterbium tarantellae*, have been implicated as fish pathogens, and it shows that through biological investigation anaerobes cause more widespread problems than has been hitherto realized (Davies, 1969). In the first place, diagnostic laboratories do not normally use anaerobic methods. Therefore, it is unlikely that isolation of an offending anaerobic pathogen would ever be achieved. Consequently, the cause of disease may not be recognized, or maybe attributed to an aerobic secondary invader.

Although there is no evidence that anaerobic pathogens have been missed, there are puzzling causes of mortalities among fish populations for which the aetiological agent has never been isolated. Of course, this could reflect the use of inappropriate methods. It is recognized, however, that anaerobes occur in aquatic sediments (Davies, 1969; Rouhbakhsh-khaleghdoust, 1975) and in the gastrocarried out in hatcheries with hormonal induction. Farmers have found that homoplastic pituitary gland cheaper, practical and more highly reliable than the imported synthetic hormonal analogues.

The *C. gariepinus* broostock weight used for artificial breeding ranges between 0.3kg and 2kg (Olaleye, 2005). Despite the breakthrough with use of hormones in induced spawning; fry survival is still beset with a number of biotic and abiotic factors (Sylvester, 2005). The biotic factors include

cannibalism, heavy predation by frog/aquatic, insects and the abiotic factors include water temperature, dissolved oxygen (>4.5mg/L-1), levels of ammonia. During the first week after stocking, the most critical factors for the successful nursing of the catfish larvae are the availability of zooplanktons.

According to Ayinla (2008), feeds and feeding of the larvae, fry and fingerlings of the catfish have been most studied and shown to influence the growth and survival of the fish. Studies have revealed that live zooplankton is the preferred larvae food. Many small holdings merely rear larvae to fingerling size in organically fertilized ponds as a density of between 30-1000 larvae/m2 (Olaleye, 2005). Fingerlings are stocked into rearing ponds at a rate of 50-75 fish/m3 under good management. Because of the cannibalistic nature, multiple sorting is essential (Eyo et al., 2001). For outdoor fry/fingerlings rearing, screening of the tanks with mosquitoes nets is recommended to prevent dragonfly and other predatory insects from breeding in the ponds. Poly-culture of Clarias gariepinus and tilapia species is practiced. A poly-culture of Clarias gariepinus and Oreochromis niloticus. intergraded with poultry with some supplementary feeding had been shown to be viable. Feed and feeding of catfishes in grow outs ponds are perhaps the most documented in literature. Various efforts have been made to establish the crude protein and amino acid requirement of c. gariepinus. Ayinla (2008) recommended 35% and 40% crude protein (CP) for raising table size and brood stock respectively.

Of the 10 essential amino acids (EAA) required by warm water fish species, only 3 EAAs studied have been documented and these are arginine, methionine and lysine (Fashakin and Balogun, 1996). In order to formulate and compound agua feeds that will meet the nutritional requirement of the catfish at affordable cost, several conventional and non-conventional animal byproducts and plant residues have been tested to substitute or replace fishmeal (Ayinla, 2008). Feeding development has moved from the use of single ingredients, broadcasting un-pelleted meal to pelleting and in fact the use of pelleted floating feed which has made a big difference to aquaculture development in Nigeria as C. gariepinus is being raised to maturity within 6 months. The yearnings of farmers and scientists to have a farmed catfish that combines the fast growth traits of Heterobranchus spp and early maturing traits of C. gariepinus led to the development of a hybrid 'Heteroclarias'spp. The technology was widely accepted as it gave 58%

internal rate of return (IRR) on investment (Adeogun et al., 1999).

Oresegun et al., (2007), stated that early fish farmers in Nigeria raised their fish in burrow pits, abandoned minefields and in earthen ponds on extensive production system. The introduction of concrete tanks allows for manageable pond size and modification of the environment through a water flow-through system and supplementary feeding thus allowing for higher fish yield. The advent of the indoor water re-circulatory system (WRS) has ushered in a new prospect for aquaculture.

The introduction of WRS has created a turning point in the production of catfish in Nigeria. The story of aquaculture in Nigeria is essentially the story of catfish culture and the hope of fish supply in Nigeria hangs on its development and culture. Recent trends all over the world, points to a decline in landing from capture fisheries, an indicator that fish stocks have approached or even exceeded the point of maximum sustainable yield. Aquaculture therefore remains the only viable alternative for increasing fish production in order to meet the protein need of the people. It was observed that of the over 30,000MT of various freshwater and brackish water fish caught in the year 2000, catfishes were more abundant next to tilapia. FAO (1993) reported that 27, 488MT of catfishes produced in 1990 were consumed locally. This implies that there is still great need for higher production for both local and international markets. Fagbenro et al., (2003), a number of problems confront the production of catfish. Prominent among these are: poor management skills, scarcity of good quality seed, lack of capital, high cost of feed, faulty data collection, lack of environmental impact consideration and marketing of products. Many people who are currently engaged in catfish farming lack management skill. Although there has been a lot of research work on the production of catfish feed and feeding, the use of cheap feedstuffs to replace or substitute fishmeal catfish farmers still rely on the costly, mostly imported pellet floating feed (Adewunmi.2005).

The success of the industries for channel catfish, rainbow trout and the salmonids in the USA is due mainly to the availability of pelleted diets formulated based on the results obtained from the nutritional studies of fishes over many years (Absoloom et al., 1999). There is urgent need for coordination of such research work and feed manufacturers' access to the relevant data for quality and relatively cheap feed production. The federal/ state governments' public/ private partnership initiative programmes and the various private concerns establishing standard hatcheries are

gradually yielding results to solve the problem of seed scarcity. However, to produce good quality seed, aquaculture needs to explore the potential of genetics. As at today, most teaching institutions do not have well equipped genetic laboratories where research can be carried out on the production of genetically improved catfish species (Omitoyin, 2007). Considerable effort had been devoted to the study and production of *Clarias* and *Heterobranchus sp* in Nigeria.

### MATERIALS AND METHODS SAMPLE COLLECTION

Ten samples of *Heteroclarias* fish (five male and five female) were obtained from Ajima fish farm Kuje Abuja, and transported to the aquaria in the department of biological sciences, University of Abuja. The fishes being starved for 48hrs in order to allow feed taken to be digested and to empty the gut content in preparation for easy dissection.

Ten samples of *Heteroclarias* fish consist of five male and five female is being differentiated from the female by the means of the reproductive organ in that the male has the papilla which is like the penis in man and the female has the oviduct close to the anus and red in color.

The aquaria used for this project was well aerated and also covered with mosquito net to prevent the fishes from jumping out and also to prevent intrusion of insect and other foreign bodies e.g. lizard, geckos, etc. Fresh water was used throughout the experiment .The fishes used were mainly adult sizes.

### ISOLATION OF BACTERIA FROM THE DIGESTIVE TRACT OF FISH

After 48 hours, the fishes were washed with sterile distilled water to remove unwanted particles a period of fasting for 48hrs allows the isolation of bacteria from the enteric content to be easy leading to the suggestion that the tract becomes effectively sterile soon after emptying (Margolis, 1993), thus the feeding history of the organism before its investigation appears to be a primary influence over the qualitative and quantitative nature of its micro flora.

The micro-organisms presence in fish gastro-intestinal tract arise from either the surrounding water or on food particles. In experiment run on fresh water, the bacteria expelled on faecal particles are capable of extensive proliferation. this is possible due to their association with the concentrated organic in the faeces and subsequent distribution into surrounding water. These observations suggest that the bacteria are adapted for existence in the enteric habitat and that this association may be significant

source of luminous cells in the fresh water environment.

Media used for this research include Nutrient agar (NA), MacConkey agar (McA), Yeast extract agar (YEA), Potatoes Dextrose agar (PDA), Salmonella Shigella agar (SSA) Eosin methyline Blue agar, (EMB) and this agar were all prepared according manufacturers instruction.

# PREPARATION OF SERIAL DILUTION FOR THE FISH SAMPLE

After 48hrs the fishes were being washed with distilled water, the fishes were also dissected to remove the entire gastro intestinal tract with sterile knife .The digestive tract surface was being homogenized in the same sterile distilled water for centrifugation, each intestine was immediately dissected with sterile knife to open the intestine and also a rubber spatula was used to scrap out the content found in the intestine of the fish and it is being placed into a sterile container (Ten sterile container)and these content of the gastro-intestinal tract was homogenized using sterile distilled water and each were being transferred to ten test tube for centrifugation which took place for 15mins at 1500rpm(rotation per minutes) after which the supernatant part of the fluid was being collected separately into another test tube there by separating it from the decant.

Then 9m1 of sterile distilled water was being placed into 5 test tubes each and the homogenized solution of Male 1,2,3,4,5 and female 1,2,3,4,5 also were serially diluted (that is 1ml of the homogenized supernatant solution)into test tube of 10<sup>-1</sup>, 10<sup>-2</sup>, 10<sup>-3</sup>, 10<sup>-4</sup>,10<sup>-5</sup> dilution. These dilution were pour plated on nutrient agar, MacConkey agar, EMB agar, potatoes dextrose agar, salmonella shicrel1a agar, yeast extract agar.

#### INOCULATION AND GROWTH

The five (5) male and five (5) female stock culture were placed inside a sterile container and about 5ml of the stock culture were placed in a test tube and centrifuge for about 15 min for about 1500 rpm and immediately the serial dilution was done up to five (5) dilution using different sterile pipette, aliquote of 0.1ml of each dilution was inoculated into MacConkey agar, Nutrient agar, Salmonella Shigella agar, yeast extract agar, EMB agar, Potatoes dextrose agar.

Pour plate method was used mainly in this period and the plate were allowed to dry together with the main culture at dry room temperature of 25°C to 30°C. Then the plates were incubated in an inverted position for 24 hours, exceptional cases were that of potatoes dextrose agar which was kept for

72hours (3 days) and in some case more than that to ensure that there was growth.

It was observed also that the yeast extract agar there was no growth even all several pour plating. The total number of colonies formed was recorded at different intervals, tabled in the result. After the growth of the colonies, discrete colonies were aseptically sub cultured with Nutrient agar (NA), MacConkey agar (McA), Eosin methylene Blue agar, Salmonella Shigella agar and thus the plate were further incubated in an inverted position for 24hours further sub culturing way done by streaking onto nutrient agar plate, EMB, SSA, MacConkey, FDA agar and incubated at 37°C for 24hours.

#### MAINTENANCE OF STOCK CULTURE

Stock culture of the isolated organisms gotten from both male and female were maintained on nutrient agar, slope at temperature of 4°C after incubation at 37°C. More so the stock culture kept in the sterile container was kept in the fridge for preservation but before then Ethanol was added to prevent it smelling and from spoiling.

#### PREPARATION OF STANDARD INOCULUMS

Organism from stock culture were sub-cultured into nutrient agar start and kept in the fridge for preservation. The preserves culture served as the standard inoculum for various morphological cultural biochemical test.

#### IDENTIFICATION OF ISOLATES Cultural Characteristics

The cultural characteristics of the isolates was observed after incubation for 24hours at 37°C on Nutrient agar, EMB agar, SSA, MacConkey agar while potatoes dextrose agar was more than 24hours and different types of isolates identified.

#### **Gram Staining**

Smears of isolates were first prepared by puffing a drop of water on the slide and picking an inoculum, air dry and heat for according to Willey et al., 2008. Each smear was then stained for 1 min using crystal violet. This was washed in gentle running tap water and then flooded with gram's iodine solution. It was again washed and decolorized with 95% alcohol and counter stained with safranin for 30 seconds finally it was washed, blow dried and observed under oil immersion objective.

#### **Mount Staining**

This list was preferred as described by Willey et al., 2008 that spore surface growth of the isolate from the midway between the centre and the periphery of the colony was made on a clean slide using a straight

needle. This spore which fluffy growth was gently tensed apart in lactophenol blue on a microscopic slide using an inoculating pin and inoculating loop and then cover slip was applied and examined microscope. This test was done in order to identify different fungi isolates.

#### **BIOCHEMICAL TEST**

#### **Catalase Test**

Two drops of hydrogen peroxide solution (3%) was placed in a glass slide. A loopful of the test organisms was added to the hydrogen peroxide solution. Presence of gas bubble in the culture shows positive test result. This was done according to Chessbrough, 2000.

#### **Motility Test**

The medium used was a semi-solid agar (Willey et al., 2008), it was prepared by adding 4g of nutrient agar to 15g of nutrient both in 1 litre of decolorized water. Heat was applied to dissolve the agar and 10ml amount were dispensed into test tube and sterilized by autoclaving. The test tubes and allowed to set in a vertical position. Inoculation was done by making a single stab down the centre of the test rube to about half the depth of the medium using a sterile stabbing rod. The test tube were incubated at room temperature and growth examined after about hours. Motile swarms gave a diffused growth that was visible to the naked eyes.

#### **Indole Test**

This test was done according to Chessbrough 2000. Pure culture of the organism were inoculated in to physiological saline and incubated at 37oC for 48 hours. Indole production was tested using 3 drops of KOVAL REAGENT made up of alcohol of 15ml, p-dimethyl amino benzaldehyde 1g and concentrated hydrocholoric acid 15ml, culture in which red colour developed are positive while absence of red colour is negative.

#### **Oxidase Test**

As stated in Chessborough, 2000, oxidase reagent containing %10 (w/v) tetramethyl-p-phenyldiamine dihydrocholoric acid was prepared by dissolving 0.1g of this compound in 10ml of deionized water strip of the filter paper was placed in a petri dish, 2-3 drops of the prepared oxidase reagent was added, smears of the isolates from the pure culture was made in the oxidase paper strip using glass or a piece of stick and not an oxidized wire loop and observation for color change was blue to purple or violet. For oxidase-negative bacteria, there is usually no colour change. This change of colour is due to the possession of cytochrome.

#### **Hydrogen Sulphide Production Test**

As described in Chessborough, 2000, this was performed using triple sugar iron (TSI) agar. The TSI was sterilized using autoclave and allowed to cool to 45oC. 9ml of TSI was disposed in test help in slant position and allowed to solidify. A loopful of the organisms was then streaked and stabbed on it and incubated at 37oC for 24-48hours. The presence of darkened colouration was positive for this production.

#### **Lactose Sugar Fermentation**

This test was carried out to know the ability of an isolate to metabolize lactose sugar (glucose, sucrose, lactose, mannitol etc) with the resultant production of acid and gas or either into 1 liter of 1 % (w/v) peptone water added to 3m1 of 0.2% (w/v) bromo cresol purple and dispensed in 9ml amount in to test tube that contained inverted Durham tubes.

The medium was then sterilized by autoclaving . the sugar solutions (glucose, sucrose and lactose) were each prepared at %10~(w/v) and sterilized. 1ml of each sugar was dispensed aseptically in to the test tube. The medium was then inoculated with the appropriate isolate and the culture incubated at  $37^{\circ}\text{C}$  for 48hours and examined for acid and gas production. A colour change from purple to yellow indicated formation while gas production was assessed by the presence of bubble in the inverted Durham's tubes.

#### **Coagulase Test**

As stated in Cheesbrough, 2000 this test is use to identify this organism that produce the enzymes coagulase. A drop of distilled water was placed on each end of the slide. This was emulsified by a colony of the test organism. A drop of plasma was added to one of the suspension and mixed gently, clumping of the organism within 10 seconds indicated a positive result.

#### TOTAL VIABLE COUNT

The total viable count of each samples of the fishes was done by dividing the incubated plates which had colonies into four parts equally and pick a particular part of the plate multiply it by a total number of divided plate and also multiply it by the reciprocal of the number of test tubes used for serial dilution (five test tube) which is  $10^5$ .

#### RESULTS

The result of the identification of microorganism population in fish in different samples, colonial morphology, cultural characteristics unit and biochemical reaction are shown in table 1, Nine bacteria isolate and four fungal isolate were isolated. For the bacteria isolate for the male fish include; Escherichia coli, Pseudomonas fluorescence. Staphylococci aureus. Klebsiella aerogenes, Salmonella enteridis, Aspergillus niger while for the female, they include Pseudomonas fluorescence, Escherichia coli, Staphylococci aureus, Bacillus cereus, Klebsiella aerogenes, Actinomycete spp, Aspergillus niger, Penicillum digitatum, Enterococcus spp, Mucor spp, Proteus vulgaris, Enterobacter spp.

The identification of *Pseudomonas flourecence* was based on aerobic gram-negative rod, indole negative, formation of fluorescent green on MacConkey agar and oxidase positive.

Escherichia coli was gram negative when stained facultative anaerobes and also aerobes, non-motile, oxidase negative, indole positive, H<sub>2</sub>S negative and shows greenish metallic sheen an Eosin methylene blue. Klesiella aerogenes was lactose fermentation positive and do not produce Hydrogen Sulphide (H<sub>2</sub>S) producing mucoid pink colonies on MacConkey agar.

Staphylococcus aureus was gram positive cocci, oxidase negative, catalase positive (effervescence positive) coagulase positive.

Samonella enteridis inform was gram negative rods, indole negative, lactose negative, gas was produced from glucose fermentation. Blackening in the medium was due to hydrogen sulphide. Bacillus cereus was motile, non-lactose fermenting and it is mainly gram-positive rod. Proteus vulgaris was non-lactose fermenting but it was able to ferment glucose and sucrose. It was also positive for indole test and also for motility test and they is also gram negative.

Enterococcus spp are aerobic organisms, they were able to ferment lactose, they were negative to catalase test, produced a small dark red magenta color on MacConkey agar, they are non-motile.

Enterobacter spp has gram negative motile rod and was able to ferment both lactose and glucose and also grows purple on Emb agar. Penicillium digitatum had folded growth with a grey fluffy mycelium. It possessed chains of spherical conidia and also has hyphen on a straight line. Mucor spp had white fluffy growth on the Petri dish (i.e. potatoes dextrose agar). Aspergillus niger had whitish fluffy spread growth after some days and also had balls of sporangium and lots of hyphen attached to it after checking it under microscope.

Actinomycetes spp has a black folded growth and also when checked under microscope it had a unique conidia structure.

Table 2, shows the biochemical reactions of some enteric bacteria and other enteric organisms found in the experiment, such properties were used to know the population of bacteria found in fish.

Table 3, showed the total viable count (TVC) found in plate after incubation of twenty hours by serial dilution method.

The result in table 4, represent the weight and length of each fish from the pond, But it should be noted that most bacterial isolated from the samples werepredominantly gram negative and some were predominantly fungus species. The total counts of the suspension are obtained by multiplying the number of colonies per plate by dilution factor which is the reciprocal of the dilution. The changes in respective values of the total count during the study period are presented in table 5; it shows a continuous increase in the total viable count. This was as a result of the organism having the ability in the medium as they utilize the nutrient component of the nutrient of the nutrient sugar as a silo source of carbon and energy. Bacterial isolated, recovered from the intestine of Heteroclarias were identified to its adult level where possible.

TABLE 2: BIOCHEMICAL REACTIONS OF SOME *ENTEROBACTERIA* AND OTHER ENTERIC ORGANISM.

Species	Lact	Glu	Suc	Mot	Indo	H2S	Gas
Escherichia coli	+	+	D	+5	+2		+2
Shigella species	_	+	_		d	_	-3
Salmonella typhi		+		+	_	+weak	
Most other							
Salmonella		+		+	_	+2	d
Klebsiella							
Aerugenes	+	+	+	+	-3		+
Enterobacter sp	+	+	+		-3	_	+
Proteus vulgaris	_	+	+	+	+	+	d
·							

KEY: Lact=lactose, Glu=glucose, suc=sucrose, mot=motility, indo=indole test, H2s= hudrogen sulphide(blackening), d=different strains give different results

**TABLE 3:**Total viable count (TVC) 10-5 dilution

Species of fish	Types of agar	No of colonies	Cful/ml
MALE 1	NA	80	8.0×10 <sup>6</sup>
2	NA	128	1.28×10 <sup>7</sup>
3	NA	112	1.12×10 <sup>7</sup>
4	NA	96	9.6×10 <sup>6</sup>
5	NA	72	7.2×10 <sup>6</sup>
FEMALE 1	NA	50	5.0×10 <sup>6</sup>
2	NA	100	1.00×10 <sup>7</sup>
3	NA	36	3.6×10 <sup>6</sup>
4	NA	68	6.8×10 <sup>6</sup>
5	NA	28	2.8×10 <sup>6</sup>
Species of fish	Types of agar	Number of colonies	Cfu/ml
MALE 1	McA	36	$3.6 \times 10^6$

2	McA	156	$1.56 \times 10^{7}$
3	McA	164	$1.64 \times 10^{7}$
4	McA	160	$1.60 \times 10^7$
5	McA	84	$8.4 \times 10^6$
FEMALE 1	McA	88	$8.8 \times 10^6$
2	McA	224	$2.24 \times 10^{7}$
3	McA	180	$1.80 \times 10^{7}$
4	McA	232	$2.32 \times 10^{7}$
5	McA	56	$5.6 \times 10^6$

Species of fish	Type of agar	Number of colonies	Cfu/ml
FEMALE 1	Emb	80	$8.0 \times 10^6$
2	Emb	124	$1.24 \times 10^7$
3	Emb	208	2.08×10 <sup>7</sup>
4	Emb	260	2.60×10 <sup>7</sup>
5	Emb	104	1.04×10 <sup>7</sup>
MALE 1	Emb	84	$8.4 \times 10^6$
2	Emb	140	1.40×10 <sup>7</sup>
3	Emb	96	9.6×10 <sup>6</sup>
4	Emb	100	1.00×10 <sup>7</sup>
5	Emb	40	$4.0 \times 10^6$
Species of fishes	Type of agar	Number of colonies	Cfu/ml
MALE 1	SSA	48	4.8×10 <sup>6</sup>
2	SSA	80	8.0×10 <sup>8</sup>
3	SSA	76	$7.6 \times 10^6$
4	SSA	124	1.24×10 <sup>7</sup>
5	SSA	212	2.12×10 <sup>7</sup>
FEMALE 1	SSA	252	2.52×10 <sup>7</sup>
2	SSA	224	2.24×10 <sup>7</sup>
3	SSA	188	1.88×10 <sup>7</sup>
4	SSA	120	1.20×10 <sup>7</sup>
			7.2×10 <sup>6</sup>

TABLE 4. Bacterial load, mean\_+ standard deviation (cfu g-1) in the intestine heteroclarias fish in different

types of agar using Number of colonies.

SEX OF	WEIGHT F	NUTRIENT	MACCONKEY	EMB AGAR	SSA AGAR
SAMPLE	FISH	AGAR	AGAR		
MALE1	34.1+- 1.0				
2	32.7+-1.0				
3	33.6+_1.7	$9.76+_4.1\times10^6$	$3.36+2.6\times10^7$	$3.00+2.5\times10^7$	$4.70 + 2.8 \times 10^6$
4	37.4+_2.4				
5	35.2+_1.5				
FEMALE1	36.5+_1.8				
2	35.4+_1.2				
3	34.7+_1.2	$4.00+_2.3\times10^6$	$4.20+_2.6\times10^7$	$4.88 + _3.5 \times 10^6$	$2.80+2.1\times10^7$
4	35.8+_1.4				
5	32.5+_1.3				

TABLE 5: The change in respective value of total viable count during incubation.

Day	p.flourescence	E.coli	S.aureus	B.cereus	k.aergenes	enterc×occus	p.vulgaris	enterobacter
0	$64 \times 10^{6}$	$5.4 \times 10^6$	4.9×10 <sup>6</sup>	$5.6 \times 10^6$	4.6×10 <sup>7</sup>	8.6×10 <sup>6</sup>	$9.6 \times 10^7$	$3.2 \times 10^8$
7	$7.5 \times 10^6$	$8.2 \times 10^6$	4.7×10 <sup>7</sup>	$3.2 \times 10^6$	1.5×10 <sup>6</sup>	5.0×10 <sup>6</sup>	$6.2 \times 10^6$	4.8×10 <sup>8</sup>
14	$6.5 \times 10^7$	$3.0 \times 10^{7}$	5.4×10 <sup>6</sup>	$7.5 \times 10^7$	$7.2 \times 10^6$	4.8×10 <sup>6</sup>	5.6×10 <sup>6</sup>	4.2×10 <sup>6</sup>
21	$5.4 \times 10^6$	$5.4 \times 10^6$	9.4×10 <sup>6</sup>	$2.5 \times 10^6$	$8.4 \times 10^6$	$7.2 \times 10^7$	$5.2 \times 10^7$	6.1×10 <sup>6</sup>

#### DISCUSSSION

The intestine of fish contains a great diversity of bacterial and fungal isolates withmany of the organisms belonging to a particular group (Margolis, 1993).it is widely postulated that enteric tract of fresh water fishes, do not contain autochthorous micro flora, but instead serve as enrichment vessels for bacteria ingested on or in their food (Horsely, 1997). After a period of extended fasting, the isolation of bacteria from the enteric content is difficult, leading to the suggestions that the trait become effectively sterile soon after emptying (Margolis, 1993). Thus the feeding history of the organism before its investigation appears to be a primary influence over the qualitative and quantitative nature of its micro flora. The E. coli isolated in this work is an indication that there is faecal contamination in the water where the fishes are living or feed with which they are being fed, since E. coli is an indicator organism. This calls for caution in the consumption of such fishes or where necessary, the cooking must be done properly to destroy this potential pathogen. Also, for the Salmonella enteritidis that was involved precaution must be taken by monitoring the kind of feed given to the fishes and also the fresh water used should be changed at specific period. Due to the fact that one of the ultimate goals of this study was to determine the presence and identify micro organism under usage of zooplankton for feeding *Heteroclarias* fish was chosen.

Unless otherwise noted, the specimen utilized in this study were dissected after 48hours of collection, it was observed that the presence of food material in the alimenting tract often correlate with high concentration of enteric micro flora, however no systematic study of this relationship was made. The appearances on the colonies on serial dilution (10<sup>-1</sup>,  $10^{-2}$ ,  $10^{-3}$ ,  $10^{-4}$ ,  $10^{-5}$  on the nutrient agar (N.A) plastic were raised, flat, flat convex and raised, in elevation while in colour were white, dirty yellow, creamyl white, white respectively, while on the other hand for MacConkey Petri dish was raised, flat and on the other hand in colour it was yellow1 brown with large colony like, and also there was formation of fluorescent green and pinkish growth while on the Eosin methylene blue agar Petri dish was mostly flat colony and few raised and colour were mostly greenish metallic sheer, shining pinkish growths and red colour respectively and for the salmonella Shigella agar was flat mostly and in door it was Mostly black and all round due to the hydrogen

sulphide it Produced. On potatoes dextrose agar was white, fluffy shape and some were black and also round in shape.

All the selected strains were identified either as gram positive or gram negative organism. They are either cocci or rod in shape. All the strains were oxidase negative except *Pseudornonas flourescence* which is positive. The result obtained from the biochemical and carbohydrate fermentation are stated in table 1.

According to Bergey's manual of systemic bacteriology the above table 1) biochemical and carbohydrate fermentation tests indicated that the characters represented by plate of 10<sup>-1</sup>, 10<sup>-2</sup>, 10<sup>-3</sup>, 10<sup>-4</sup>, 10<sup>-5</sup> are mostly Staphylococci aureus and Bacilli cereus and the Ones found on MacConkey were Pseudornonas spp, Kiebsiella spp,proteus spp, Enterococcus spp and on the Eosin methylene blue (EMB) Petri dish was mostly Enterobacter, Kiebsiella and Escherichia Coli and on the potatoes dextrose agar plate was mostly Aspergillus niger and ActinomyceteS due to the sporangium and hyphae seen in microscopy and whitish fluffy colour seen on the plate.

From the result in the table 5.0, the analysis on bacteria Carried out on a day shows lesser microbial load, followed by day seven analysis on the bacteria in fish which shows a higher microbial load than that of day one and finally, the analysis on bacteria on day twenty one shows the highest microbial load. This data of microbial load present in the Petri dish was discovered to be due to sorne factors leading to the multiplication of organism on nutrient agar, Eosin methylated blue agar, MacConkey agar, Salmonella shigella agar.

The report gotten from the study establishes important points concerning the ecology of fresh water bacteria.

- 1. They are commonly present in the gastro intestinal tracts of many fresh water fishes.
- 2. Their presence in fish gastro intestinal tract can arise from ingestion of bacteria (from the surrounding water or on food particles).
- 3. In experiments run in sterilized fresh water, the bacteria expelled on faecal particles are capable of extensive proliferation (possibly due to their association with the concentrated organism in the faeces) and subsequent distribution into surrounding water.

These observations suggest that luminous bacteria are well adapted for existence in the enteric habitant and that this association may be a significant source of luminous cells in the fresh water environment. In addition, the same species of bacteria are generally present both in the entenc tract.

In this way the contribution that these microbes make to the degradation and mobilization of organic compound can be estimated.

#### CONCLUSION

In conclusion, the result that showed that bacterial load in The intestine of Heteroclarias fish varies in its gender (i.e male and female), the bacterial load in fish might be increased with the increase of water temperature (Fernades et al., 1997; Hasseen et al., 1999). By monitoring the bacterial load in fish from growing pond, which will affect the storage life and quality of the fishery product the quality of fish being produced can be measured.

The predominant bacterial flora consisted of gram negative rods. The bacterial flora detected in the intestine of Heteroclarias fish varied in its gender. *Pseudomonas fluoresces, E. coli, S. aureus and Salmonella* was dominated fl all bacterial isolates examined from intestine of Heteroclarias fish.

The high prevalence of *Pseudomonas fluoresces, Escherichis coli* and *salmonella spp*, throughout the study period suggest that these bacteria may be common bacteria commensal in Heteroclarias intestine. Ruane et al., (1997) as observed in significant coliform, including E. coli in fish culture ponds at 24-29°C, it may be expected that the bacterial flora in Heteroclarias intestine would also vary.

The bacterial presence or the particular species complex detected in the intestine of Heteroclarias fish probable had effect on fish disease prevalence. None of the fish sampled was dead (that is it may be due to cannibalism). No pathogenic bacteria are species for Heteroclarias, but some affect them more severely than they do in other cultured fishes. In this present study isolation of *E.coli*, *P. fluoresces*, *Salmonella spp*, *Staph. aureus*, which are facultative pathogen or agent of food poisoning is of utmost importance. The present result indicated that the commensal bacterial flora included facultative pathogens which under conditions of stress could give rise to fish epizootics (Billard, 1980).

This information will help in controlling the storage life quality of the fishery product arid if considerable effort will be devoted to the study and production of *Heteroclarias* fish, cat fish farming will attract private sector initiative compared to earlier public or government - sponsored programmes (Balogun et al.,1992). If the associated problems of reductions especially the issue of feed production and fingerling supply are tackled, Nigeria will soon become a world exporter of cat fish.

#### REFERENCES

- 1. Absalom, K. V., Omoregie, E. and Igbe, A. M. (1999). Effects of Kidney bean *(phaseolus vulgaris)* meal on the growth performance, feed utilization and protein digestibility on the Nile tilapia. *Journal of Aquatic Science*. 14:55-59.
- Adeogun, O.A and. Ayinla., A.M. Ajana., and E.A. Ajao (1999). Economic Impact assessment of hybrid catfish (Heteroclarias) in Nigeria. Technical Report of National Agricultural Research Project (NARP). NIOMR, Victoria Island, Lagos. Pp 27.
- 3. Adewurni A.A. (2005). The effects of the heating time of soybean for the broodstock nutrition on the reproductive performance of *C. gariepinus* (Burchell 1822). Pp 162.
- 4. Ayinla, O. A., and Akande, G. R. (2008). Growth Responses of *Ciarias gariepmus* (Burchell, 1822). On silage based diets. NIOMR Technical Paper No. 37 pp 18.
- Balogun, A. M., Bello- Ilusoji, O and Fasakin, E.A. (1992). Protein and Amino acid requirement of warm water fishes: A tool to efficient and low cost fish feed in Nigeria. Proclamation of Fish Society in Nigeria 10: 95-104.
- 6. Bedairo, J.M. (1985). Hand Book of Tropical Fish Culture. France, pp 165.
- Billad, J. (1980). In the pond fish farming. Symposium on Fish Production in ponds. pp 169-281.
- 8. Cruz, E M. and Laudencia, I. L. (1980). Polyculture of Milk fish (*Chaenos chanos Furskal*) all male Nile tilapia (Oreochromis niioticus) and Snake head (*OphicephaluS striatus*) in fresh water ponds with supplementary feeding. *Aquaculture*, 20(3), 23 1-237.
- Davies, M. N. (1969). A review of the integrated livestock fowl fish farming systems. In Pullin R.S.U. and Shehodeh Z.H. (eds). ICLARM conference proceedings 4, International Centre for living Aquatic resources and Management, Manilla, Phillipines pp 59-71.
- 10. Davies, M.N. and Ruhbakhsh-Khaleghdoust, J. U. (1975). Recruitment control and production of *Tilapia aurea* (*Sterinadachner*) with the predator, Cichiasarna managuense (Gunther). Aquaculture 4(4), 383-390.
- 11. Elmendo, E. (1980). Design and Perfomance of Recirculating Systems for New York Science Journal 201 0;3(10) European eel Anguilla and African Catfish. *Clarias gariepinus* in: Proceeding of AES Workshop, Florida, U.S.A., pp.18-28. http://www.sciencepub.net/newyork newyorksci@ginall.com.

- 12. Eyo,AA.; B.A. Falayi and T.C. Ajayi (2001): Comparison of extruded and non-extruded soybean meals in the diet of genetically improved mudfish, *H.longifilis* juveniles. Book of Abstracts of the 16th Annual Conference of Fisheries Society of Nigeria, Daga, 4-9th Nov., p35.
- 13. Fashakin E.A and A. M. Balogun (1996): Replacement of groundnut cake with processed soybean meals in diets for the African mud catfish, *C. gariepinus Journal of Applied Tropical Agriculture*. 1:5-11.
- 14. Fagbenro, O.A. and S.J. Davis (2003): Use of high percentages soybean protein concentrate as fishmeal substitute in practical diets for African catfish, *C.gariepinus* (Burchell 1822): growth, feed utilization and digestibility. *Journals Applied Aquatic Science* 16 (1).
- 15. Food and Agricultural Organization (1993): Yearbook of fishery Statistics. Catches and Landings. FAO of the United Nations, Rome. Vol. 72, pp 643.
- Guerrero, L.; Robert, C.E.; and Boulter, D. (1977). Optimal dietary protein level for Heterobranchus bidorsalis fingerlings fed compound diets. Israeli Journal of Aquaculiure Bamidegh 44(3), pp 87-92.
- 17. Hush, W. (1980). Research and Education for the Dvelopment of Integrated Crop-livestock-fishfarming systems in the Tropics. Review 16, pp. 106.
- 18. Hent, E.O and Luberichit, (1988). Review of the state of world fishery resources: inland fisheries. Pp102.
- 19. Lovell, I.M. (1980). Plant food for human nutrition. Qualities plantation, 27, pp 277-285.
- Legendary, C.E.; Kimpe, P.; Lazard, J. and Lessent, P. (1991). Water Quality management in Pond Fish Culture Research and Development Series. international Centre for Aquaculture, Agricultural Experiment Station, Auburn University, Auburn Alabama.
- 21. Mork, O.C; Nor, dvedt and Holm A.R. (1991). Dietary Protein Requirement of Genetically Improved *Heterobranchus longifillis*. Pp. 35-36.
- 22. Olaleye V.F. (2005): A review of reproduction and gamete management in the African catfish, *C. gariepinus* (Burcheli). *Ife J. Sci.* 7(1): 63-70.
- 23. Olukunle A.O. and Falaye A.E. (1998): Use of sesame seed cake as replacement for fishmeal in diets for catfish, *Clarias gariepinus* (Burchell 1822). *Appl.Trop. Agric.* 3(2): 86-91.
- 24. Omitoyin, B.O. (2007): Introduction to fish fanning in Nigeria. University of Ibadan Press. 9Op.

- Oresegun, A.; O.A. Ayinla; G.R. Akande, M. Ndem and J. Simpa (1996): Feeds and feeding practice of fish farmers in Lagos state. NIOMR Technical paper 19, p11.
- 26. Oregun, A.; O. R. Oguntade and O. A. Ayinla (2007): A review of catfish culture in Nigeria. *Nig. J. Fisheries.* 4(1):27-52.
- 27. Pan, J.H. and Zeng, W. B. (1986). Study on the artificial crossing Of Clarias lazera and the culture effect of the hybrid. Act in. *Hydrobiology. vol.* 10(i):pp 96-98.
- 28. Poprna, J. T. (1978). Experiments on the effects of *Tilapia radaili* Boulenger on the growth Petenia Krauslli sterindochner in tanks. Information. Technology. Centre. Piscic. Expression. University. Caldas pp 63-67.
- 29. Sakata, B. (1978). Tropicai Feeds. Food and agricultural Association of the United Nations, Rome. Italy. Pp 525.
- 30. Shepard, B. (1988). The Development of Polyculture in Isreal: a model of Intensification. *Aquaculture 126. Pp 42-46.*
- 31. Steiner, J.R. (1979). Evaluation of Polyculture in Plastic Fish ponds utilizing the catfish (*Ictolurus punctatus*) and blue Tilapia (*Sarotherodon aureus*) fed with bird food. Pp36.
- 32. Sunset. H. and Bayne, P. (1978). Chemical and Biological Methods of Water Analysis for

- Aquaculturists, 1st Edition. Institute of Aquaculture, Stirling, Great Britain, Pp. 119.
- 33. Solomon, S. G.; A. A. Eyo and F.D. Sikoki (1996): An investigation of the effect of replacing fishmeal with soybean meal, groundnut cake and bloodmeal at varied proportion on growth and food utilization of the *Clarias anguillaris* fingerlings fed in outdoor hapas. In: Proceedings of the 13th Annual conference of the fisheries Society of Nigeria (FIS ON), New Bussa, 3rd-8th Nov 1996. Ed A.A. Eyo. Pp 144-150
- 34. Sylvester, KB. (2005). Relationship between seed size and protein content in newly developed high protein lines of pigeon pea. *Plant Foods Human Nutrition Vol. 36. Pp 335-340*.
- 35. Trust, S.. Kanazawa, A. and Uchi ama (2006). Effects of several protein sources and other factors on the growth of *Oreochromis niloticus*. *Bulletin of Japanese Society of Science Vol.* 52. *Pp.* 523-530.
- 36. Willey, J.M.; Sherwood, L.M. and Woolverton, C.J. (2008). Prescott, Harley and Klein 's Microbiology, 7th Edition, McGraw Hill Companies, Inc. New York.Pp. 1060.

6/18/2013

# Gas Chromatography-Mass Spectrometry Analysis Of Petroleum Ether Extract *Of Piper Guineese* Seeds (Schum And Thonn)

Usenekong O.E., Sambo David And Efiom, O

Department Of Chemistry, University Of Abuja, P.M.B. 117, Abuja

**ABSRACT:** *Piper guineese* is herbal recipe ingredient widely used in African Traditional Medicine (ATM). The essential oil of *piper guineese* seeds was analysed by using GC-MS, which led to the identifications of many constituents present in the medicinal plant. The essential oil consist mainly alcohol, ether saturated and unsaturated hydrocarbon. The major compounds of the essential oil were 1,3-benzodioxole, 4,7-dimethoxy,5-(2-propenyl, 1,3-Benzodioxole, 4-methoxy-6-(2-propenyl) and 1,3-Benzodioxole, 5-(1-propenyl).

[Usenekong O.E., Sambo David And Efiom, O. **Gas Chromatography-Mass Spectrometry Analysis Of Petroleum Ether Extract** *Of Piper Guineese Seeds (Schum And Thonn). Academia Arena* 2013;5(6):52-55] (ISSN 1553-992X). <a href="http://www.sciencepub.net/academia">http://www.sciencepub.net/academia</a>. 5

KEY WORDS: Piper guineese, essential oil, constituent, hydrocarbon and Gc-Ms

#### INTRODUCTION

Piper guineese belong to the family of pipeeareae. Members of this family are known to be herbs or shrubs which have erect, scandent or climbing. The medicinal plant is distributed throughout Nigeria and other West African Countries including Ghana, Cameroun and Senegal (Olorode 2011). Piper guineese is known as Odusa among the Efik people of Cross River and Uziza among the people of South East of Nigeria. They can also be used in the management of ailment such as rheumatism, antipyretic, anti-emetic, mental illness, impotence and microbial, diabetic and hypertension.

The plant also played a roles in many of the industries and are used in perfumery soap, incense as dyes in histology and various acts. (Onyeson and Okoh 2006). The study of various seed extract of the plants have shown that the plant has contains substance that interfere with conception in mice (Ekanem et al 2010). Several active compounds previously identified and isolated from the seed of *piper guineese* includes, piperanine, N-isobutyl (E,E)-2,4,4-decandienamide and  $\alpha\beta$ -dihydro wasamin (Ekanem 2010). The aim of the work is to investigate and identify other phyto chemical constituents present in the seed of *piper guineese*.

#### MATERIAL AND METHODS

The seeds of *piper guineese* (schum and thonn) were purchased from a local market in Uyo Akwa-Ibom State Nigeria. Plant identification and authentication has been done earlier (Ekanem 2010) and voucher specimen had been deposited at

herbarium unit of Department of Botany University of Abuja.

#### EXTRACTION PROCEDURE

30g of the powdered seed of *piper guineese* was exhaustively extracted in 400ml pet Ether (60-80) using percolation method and then concentrated to dry mass using rotary vacuum evaporator. The weight of the dry extract was stored in airtight container until required.

#### Gas Chromatography-mass spectrometry analysis

The Gc-Ms analysis was carried out using thermo scientific trace Gas chromatography model (ultra As 3000 series). The Gc was

equipped with an As 3000 auto sample and split/splitles injector. The column was  $(30\times0.25\text{nm})$  with film thickness of 0.25um

coated with 5% diphenyl 95% poly dimethyl siloxane. The column oven was programmed from  $50^{\circ}\text{C}$  to  $250^{\circ}\text{C}$  at  $20^{\circ}\text{C/mm}$  under the following condition carrier gas Helium, split ratio 30:1 flame ionization detector (FID)  $250^{\circ}\text{C}$ .

Identification of compounds in the *piper guineese* seeds was conducted using data base of the library search. The mass Spectrum of the identify compounds stored in the soft ware data base library.

#### RESULTS

The results are shown in Table 1 and Figures 1, 2.

**Table 1:** Result of GC/MS analysis of the essential oil of *piper guineese* showing their RT, Intensity and % composition

Peak	RT	Composition		% composition
1	3.79	1,6-0ctadien-3-ol-3,7-dimethyl	4.07	
2	6.17	1,3-Benzodioxide, 5-(1-propenyl)	3.59	
3	7.23	Tricyclo(4.4.0.02,7) dec-3-ene 1,3-dimethy-8-(1-methylethyl)	6.69	
4	7.35	Naphthalene 1, 2, 3, 4, 4a, 5, 6, 8a-octahydro-7-Methyl-4-methylene-1-(1-methylethyl)	5.22	
5	7.92	Bicyclo (7, 2, undec-4-ene 4, 11, 11-trimethyl-8-methylene)	13.05	
6	8.09	1, 6, 10-Dodecatriene, 7, 11-dimethyl-3-Methylene (E)	2.45	
7	8.49	1, 4, 8 Cycloundecatriene 2,6,6,9-tetramethyl (E,E,E)	4.89	
8	8.82	1,6 Cyclodecadiene-1-methyl-5-methylene-8- (1-methylethyl) (s(EE)	16.31	
9	9.02	Cyclohexane, 1-methyl-4-(5-methyl-1-Methylene-4-hexenyl, (s)	2.34	
10	9.27	Cedr-8(15)-ene	10.60	
11	9.47	1,3-Benzodioxole,4,methoxy-6-(2-propenyl)	12.24	
12	10.90	1,3-Benzodioxole,4,7-dimethoxy-5-(2-propenyl)	17.94	

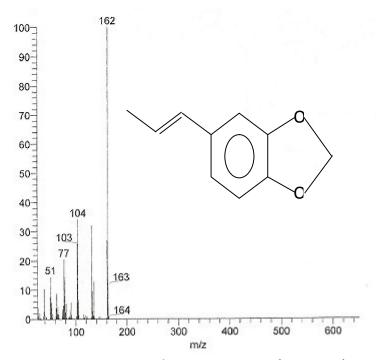


Fig 1: Mass spectrum of 1,3-benzodioxole,5-(1-propenyl)

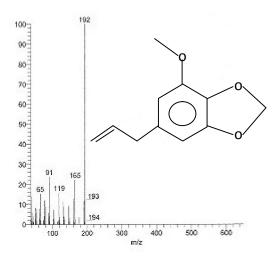


Fig 1: Mass spectrum 1, 3-Benzodioxole, 4-methoxy-6-(2-propenyl)

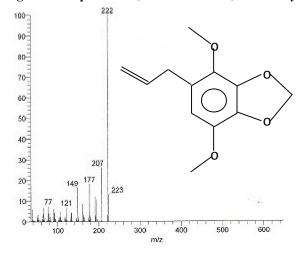


Fig 3: Mass spectrum of 1, 3-Benzodioxole, 4,7-dimethoxy-5-(2-propenyl)

#### DISCUSSION

The result of the GC-MS analysis of the essential oil of piper guineese identified the various compounds present in the plant. From the gas chromatogram of the extract which shows 12 distinct peaks identified by GC-MS while the compound identified through computer data library search are listed in table 1. The major compounds present in the essential oil of piper guineese as identified by GC-MS were 1,3-Benzodioxole, 5-(1-propenyl) (RT:6.17),1,3-Benzodioxole,4-methoxy-6-(2-propenyl)12αβ (RT: 9.47) and 1,3-Benzodioxole, 4,7-dimenthoxy-5-(2-propenyl) (RT: 12.90). The GC-MS spectrum gives the structure of the compounds figure 1,2and3 molecular formula as  $C_{10}H_{10}O_2$ ,  $C_{11}H_{12}O_3$  and  $C_{12}H_{14}O_4$  respectively.

Other component also identified in the oil of guineese are 1,6-octadien-3-ol, dimethy(3.79:RT), Tricyclo (4,4,0.02), dec-3-ene (RT: 7.23), Naphthalene. 1,2,3,4, 4a,5,6,8-octahydro-7methyl-4-methylene-(1-methylethyl) (RT: B.cyclo(7.20) undec-4-ene, 4,11,11-trimethy(-8methylene (RT:7.92), 1,6,10-Dodecatriene, 7,11-(RT: dimethy-3-methylene 8.09), 1.4.8cycloundecatriene, 2,6,6,9-tetramethyl (RT:8.49), 16cyclodecadiene, 1-methylene-8-(1-methyethyl) (RT: 8.82), Cylcohexane, 1-methy-5-methylene-4-hexenyl (RT:9.02) and Cedra-8-(15)-ene(RT: 9.27).

It has been reported that many medicinal plants are rich varieties of secondary metabolite such as essential oil and have been used for many thousand years in food preservative medicine and natural therapies (Onveson and OKoh 2006). Apart from the essential oil providing energy, it can also contain modest but useful amount of the compounds on important component of membrane phospholipid or precursor to number of critical compounds once found in virtually all tissue membrane of human (Cley et al 2004). Earlier studies carried out using the seed of piper guineese revealed that the seeds are found to be a potential source of anti oxidants due to the present of polyphenonic compound (Otshudi 2005). Essential oils are rich source of biologically active compound. In looking at anti-microbial properties extract from the plant is particularly essential. Essential oil has been reported to be immune enhancing, anti-bacterial, antifungal, antiviral, and antiseptic, wound healing anti-inflammatory and anti-cancer properties (Ali 2011). The present study aimed at identifying wide range of the nature of compounds of the plant which might play role as reported in African traditional medicine.

#### REFERENCE

- 1. Tolu, Odugbemi (2008) A text book of medicinal plants from Nigeria University of Lagos Press Lagos Nigeria Page 594.
- **2.** Onyeson, I. and Okoh, P.N (2006) Quantitative analysis of Nitrate and Nitrite Contents in vegetable commonly consumed in Delta State Nigeria. *Br.J.Nutr* 96(5)2-905.
- **3.** Ekanem, AP, Udoh EV, and Oku, EE. (2010) Effects of Ethanol extract of Piper guineese seeds (schum and Thonn) on conception of mice (Musulus) *journal of Pharmacy and Pharmacology* 4(6) 362-367.
- **4.** Friday, OU Emaka E.J.I and Ijeoma K (2011) studies on the chemical and antinutritional content of some spices. *Journal of Nitrition and metabolism* 3(6) 72-76.
- **5.** Olorode, A (2011) Taxonomy of West African Flowering Plants, 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition Ile-Ife,- Nigeria 25-26.
- **6.** Glew, Rs Vandan Jagt DJ, Huang YS chauang Li Glew, RH (2004) Nutritional Analysis of the edible pit of Sclerocarya birrea *J food comp Anal* 17(1) 99-111.
- 7. Otshudi AL, Aperss Pieter L Clacys M VannZeebroeck, A (2005) *Journal of Ethnopharmacology* 102(89).
- **8.** Ali, A.S (2011) Evaluation of antibacterial activity of essential oil of annamomum Sp. *Journal of Basral Researches (sciences)* 37(5A).

6/12/2013

# Academia Arena

(Academ Arena) ISSN 1553-992X

# 学术争鸣

# Call for Papers

Academia Arena is published bi-linguistically with English and Chinese for the scientists and Engineers by Marsland Press in USA. The journal founded in January 1, 2009 aims to present an arena of science and engineering. The Editor-in-Chief, Associate Editors-in-Chief and Editors have backgrounds in Philosophy, Science, Technology, Cosmology, Mathematics, Physics, Chemistry, Biology, Medicine, Civil, Electrical, Mechanical Engineering, etc. Papers submitted could be reviews, objective descriptions, research reports, opinions/debates, news, letters, and other types of writings. All manuscripts submitted will be peer-reviewed and the valuable manuscripts will be considered for the publication after the peer-review.

学术争鸣于2009年元月1日在美国纽约马斯兰德出版社发刊,主要目标为提供科学家与工程师及社会工作者学术辩论的发表园地,专业领域包含哲学、科学、技术、宇宙学、数学、物理、化学、生物学、医学、土木、电机、化工、机械工程,等,编辑群将以最专业客观的立场为所有投稿作者服务。

Here is a new avenue to publish your outstanding reports and ideas.

Papers in all fields are welcome, including articles in natural science and social science.

Please send your manuscript to: <a href="mailto:aarenaj@gmail.com">aarenaj@gmail.com</a>

For more information, please visit: <a href="http://www.sciencepub.net/academia">http://www.sciencepub.net/academia</a>

Marsland Press PO Box 180432 Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Telephone: (347) 321-7172 E-mail: <u>sciencepub@gmail.com</u>;

editor@sciencepub.net

Emails: editor@sciencepub.net; aarenaj@gmail.com Website: http://www.sciencepub.net/academia

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/

# Academia Arena

Marsland Press PO Box 180432 Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Websites:

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia

http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails:

aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net

Phone: (347) 321-7172

Cover design: MA, Hongbao Photograph: YOUNG, Mary

